

苏小暖 著

邪王追妻：

废材逆天小姐

ATMOS
HEROINE



Chapter 1001 – Rong Yun’s Fury (3)

Grandmaster Rong Yun’s deep eyes were as cold and sharp as a falcon’s.

“You just hate her that much?” He looked at Fairy Yan Xia indifferently.

“Yes, I hate her! I hate her so much that I wish she would just die!!!”

Mentioning that taboo name, Fairy Yan Xia immediately started to act irrationally!

“If it was not for that slut, how could you not want me! And still saying some brother-sister bullshit, the most nauseating was her! That slut...”

Before Fairy Yan Xia could finish speaking.

“Slap——” One could only hear a heavy slap pass by.

Fairy Yan Xia’s emaciated body was immediately sent flying and she heavily smashed into a wall. The explosive sound from her hitting the wall resounded.

“Cough, cough, cough——” While Fairy Yan Xia coughed out blood, she also laughed like a maniac. She laughed until tears came out.

Grandmaster Rong Yun’s tall figure was rock-firm and unyielding, he stood there motionless. His face had no expression and was as cold as frost.

“Rong Yun. Rong Yun, why must you defend her like this? WHY?!” Fairy Yan Xia shrieked and shouted with her heart tearing and lungs splitting open.

Rong Yun indifferently looked at her as if looking at a dead person.

“Cough, cough, cough——” Fairy Yan Xia suddenly howled with laughter, “Rong Yun, you are too late. You want to kill me now, it’s already too late.”

Rong Yun remained silent.

Fairy Yan Xia continued to laugh like a maniac: “Have you seen that cheap

girl's face? Hahahahahaha——she is toast, she will certainly die!”

Rong Yun's expression suddenly changed. His figure was as fast as lightning, flashing by, leaving an afterimage.

In the next second, he already grabbed Fairy Yan Xia by the throat: “Who did you tell?”

“Hahaha——” Fairy Yan Xia laughed until tears came out. Her face was twisted into a sinister expression that was shockingly horrible to see.

“Who have I told? Who do you think I told this to? Hahaha——”

Rong Yun looked all around and when he saw a dark red bloodstain in a corner, a cold light flashed through his eyes.

Fairy Yan Xia, who once considered herself to be unparalleled, was now like a crushed doll that was carelessly tossed on the ground by Rong Yun.

Rong Yun used his finger to dip a touch of the bloodstain and sniffed it with his nose.

Very quickly, his dark, thick sharp eyebrows knotted tightly.

When Fairy Yan Xia saw him like this, her laugh became increasingly more deranged. She even hammered at the ground with both hands as she laughed her head off: “Su Luo, that cheap girl, will definitely die! She is toast! Hahaha ——”

“Bitch!” Rong Yun's always gentle and tranquil face, in a flash, looked like a gale storm.

Right now, he simply could not restrain his rage.

“Hahah——enter the demonic path, become the Demon Lord, the return of the King of Demons, hahaha——”

Fairy Yan Xia seemed to have gone completely insane.

At this moment, she had a head that was disheveled and she cut a very sorry figure. Her entire person seemed to have sunk into some kind of a dream, her eyes lifeless and blurred.

However, she clearly seemed very happy and very excited, continuously laughing and laughing...

“Speak, where is that person?” Rong Yun very fiercely squeezed Fairy Yan Xia’s emaciated shoulders and shook her with a lot of strength.

The strength was so great that it nearly shook Fairy Yan Xia into pieces.

However, Fairy Yan Xia continued to laugh, laughing like a dimwit, laughing nonstop.

Rong Yun’s expression suddenly seemed somewhat anxious.

In this world, there shouldn’t be something that would make Rong Yun anxious, but right now, he was definitely impatient and uneasy.

“Who is that person?” Rong Yun clenched Fairy Yan Xia’s Lingtai acupuncture point.

Lingtai acupuncture point was the location where a cultivator’s powers were stored.

Fairy Yan Xia was sober for a split second, and suddenly, she shouted: “Yun Qi, run! Quickly run! Do not let Rong Yun catch you!”

Yun Qi?

“Yun Qi! 《Peak of the Demonic Path》! You have to become the Demon Lord, you must become the Demon Lord!”

Rong Yun clenched both fists tightly as his heart gradually sank to the floor...

Chapter 1002 – Rong Yun’s Fury (4)

He never imagined that the《Peak of the Demonic Path》that was lost from back then would appear in Fairy Yan Xia’s hands!

She actually kept it for this many years, and only facing death’s door, did she pass it on!

“Where is he? Quickly speak!” Rong Yun very fiercely squeezed Fairy Yan Xia’s shoulders, the strength he used was astonishing.

Fairy Yan Xia suddenly coughed loudly, mouthful after mouthful of blood madly spraying out. It appeared both shocking and terrifying.

“Yan Hua....Killed.....Little Princess....Hahaha....Hahaha....”

“Yun Qi...Will become the Demon Lord....he must kill her...Hahaha... Hahaha....”

Under fits of wild laughter, Fairy Yan Xia suddenly died. She closed her eyes forever and wordlessly left.

Even Yun Qi didn’t expect that the old witch Yan Xia would make this move in the end.

Rong Yun’s face was cold as he maliciously glared at her motionless body, the cold light bubbling forth from his eyes.

Just because Yan Hua killed that little princess, it resulted in him using the ‘alter the appearance to change the reflection’ technique after Luo Luo was born, trying to protect her.

However——

The fists at Rong Yun’s side clenched tightly.

Yan Xia had actually guessed correctly and had Luo Luo’s face restored to its

original state.

From now on, Luo Luo's road would be increasingly difficult to travel on.

A touch of concern appeared in Rong Yun's eyes.

If he was to return even stronger from the demonic path...the evildoer's strength from the demonic path would be indomitable. Even if he and Nangong Liuyun could always stay by Luo Luo's side, they might not necessarily be able to protect her.

Rong Yun wanted to prevent this.

But it was already too late.

The Demon race were experts at concealment, once he entered the demonic path, it would be hard to lock onto his location.

Even he could not find Yun Qi's whereabouts now.

Rong Yun took a final glance at that stiff corpse, without hesitation, he turned around and left.

Swallow Cloud Mountain, the battle of experts frightened the entire world.

This battle, not only did it change the millennium-old landform of Swallow Cloud Mountain, in addition, Fairy Yan Xia, this female devil, finally died.

Yun Qi was enticed to enter the demonic path.

Su Luo remained unconscious, it was unpredictable whether she would live or die.

No one could have imagined that when Rong Yun retaliated, his methods would be so swift and decisive, so vicious and merciless.

The one hundred and eight secret training bases in this entire continent, and about tens of thousands of people who cultivated.

These were all Fairy Yan Xia's subordinates.

In a few days' time, these secret bases, just as if they had never existed, were destroyed and would forever disappear into the long river of history.

Ordinary people still lived their normal lives, completely unaware that not far

from them, was a secret base with piles of dead bodies.

The ten powerful clans' sense of smell was sharp, it was impossible that they did not know of this matter.

When they received the news, everyone was endlessly shocked at Grandmaster Rong Yun's methods.

Rong Yun appeared to be mild and gentle, who would have thought that his methods would be like thunderous lightning weighing one hundred and fifty thousand kilograms, so ruthless and cruel.

That was more than ten thousand people who cultivated...completely exterminated.

The Jade Lake Palace's reaction was even bigger.

When old grandfather Li heard this news, his hand that held the teacup paused slightly.

His gaze looked at the distant sky, showed a sinister expression and ordered: "These days, first, don't go find that girl to make trouble."

You really couldn't tell that Rong Yun would value that girl so much.

However... Aotian, Aoqiong, and also Yaoxiang, the three direct descendents, and part of the Jade Lake Palace's core, all lost their lives in this cheap girl's hand.

That girl killed so many people from Jade Lake Palace, want to let her off? That would be impossible!

Old grandfather Li thought a bit, opened the treasure storehouse pavilion, and took out a small embroidered box.

The embroidered box was made from a mysterious black wood, containing a millennium-old immortality that still gave off a faint fragrance.

"Yaoyao, come see Grandfather." Old grandfather Li's spirit transmitted this to a nearby courtyard.

In that place, Li Yaoyao was single-mindedly cultivating.

Chapter 1003 – To save and treat Su Luo (1)

Grandmaster Rong Yun returned to Cloud Mist Peak.

At this time, Su Luo was still unconscious, and she depended on Nangong Liuyun giving her a steady flow of spirit energy to preserve her life.

Rong Yun quietly looked at Su Luo with his eyes fixed on that familiar face.

“Save her.” Nangong Liuyun’s voice was ice-cold.

Rong Yun had both hands behind his back and stood in front of the window, his white gown was pulled by the wind.

Looking into the distant horizon with eyes that were like calm waves, a trace of light flashed across his eyes when he heard this sentence.

After a long while, Rong Yun’s gaze finally shifted back from looking out the window. A sad and pitying expression flashed across his eyes and he faintly sighed, “It’s not easy to save her.”

If it was possible to save her, how could he not have undertaken the task?

He, more so than anyone else, hoped that Luo girl would be healthy, happy, safe and sound.

Nangong Liuyun stood up forcefully, his lanky body giving off ample oppressive feeling. His pair of eyes carried a trace of franticness as he glared at Rong Yun with a burning gaze: “Save her!”

Rong Yun’s eyes were a deep black like the ink in an ink-washed painting, so deep that you couldn’t see the bottom.

He thought for a while, then finally, that pair of sharp eyes shot directly towards Nangong Liuyun: “You’re certain you want to save her?”

“If my life can be exchanged for hers, I would absolutely be willing to do it.”

Nangong Liuyun's gaze was ice-cold and abstruse, an arrogant and noble aura penetrating throughout his body, so powerful and threatening.

Rong Yun calmly looked at him, as if trying to distinguish what was genuine and what was fake in his words.

The current Nangong Liuyun's long body stood like jade, tall, straight and dignified. He appeared calm but his expression was malicious, with his whole body full of an austere aura: "You say it."

Rong Yun's gaze was ice-cold, clear and shallow, yet a deep meaning flashed across his eyes.

"Want to save her, it's very difficult." Rong Yun was still as indifferent as before, misty and indistinct like the wind, "Although you won't need to pay with your life, but the danger level is at one out of ten chance to live.."

"It's merely one out of ten chance to live. As long as I can save Luo Luo, even if it is zero chance to live out of ten, I'll still go." Nangong Liuyun's sonorous voice covered over all the clamor. It rang by Rong Yun's ear.

Rong Yun's gaze momentarily brightened as if he could see through everything in the world.

"Since it's like this, you should sit down. Listen to me as I slowly explain." Rong Yun looked at Nangong Liuyun, his alienating attitude from before gradually softening somewhat.

"Luo girl's injuries are very grave. If she isn't saved, without a doubt, after three months, she will certainly die."

Rong Yun's gaze carried a firmness that wouldn't allow any comment on this issue.

When Nangong Liuyun heard this, his whole body suddenly paused and his heart was ruthlessly seized at the same time.

"You said that Luo Luo will die?" He glared at Rong Yun with an imposing and threatening manner, with a murderous aura that rightfully, would make people tremble with fear.

"She will die." Rong Yun did not conceal the truth at all, "Your spirit energy

can maintain her life for a period of time, but cannot be maintained for a lifetime. One year is the longest time you can maintain her life.”

That is to say, if they don't save her within one year, Luo Luo will...

Thinking up to here, Nangong Liuyun's complexion turned pale. He pursed his thin lips, and his jawline was like a nobleman's, proud and ice-cold: “You tell me, how is this to be done?”

He was wholeheartedly willing, even if he was skinned with a knife and deep fried.

Rong Yun's handsome facial features raised slightly: “Have you heard of the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort?”

Nangong Liuyun's eyebrows wrinkled slightly: “The Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort that can give life to the flesh and bones of a dead person?”

Nangong Liuyun had read extensively since he was young. He was widely read and knowledgeable. Many things that had disappeared into the long river of history, he would inevitably have an impression.

“Uhm.” Rong Yun looked outside the window. His voice was faint, misty and indistinct like the wind, “Inside the Xian's Wood Residence, there is a Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort.”

He only said this sentence and would no longer say anything more.

He believed that Nangong Liuyun would understand.

However, when Nangong Liuyun heard this, he stood there in a daze, motionless. After a long while, his eyes turned slightly with a gaze that was sharp as ice knives said: “Xian's Wood Residence?”

As part of the present age's ten great families, Xian's Wood Residence—these three words, how could he not have heard of it before?

Chapter 1004 – To save and treat Su Luo (2)

It was rumored that Xian's Wood Residence was the official residence for the Xian family. Inside was a countless number of spirit treasures. However, the spirit treasures' level were directly proportional to the difficulty of the mechanisms.

Rumor had it that Xian's Wood Residence's mechanisms were exquisite, nobody could solve them all.

The Xian's Wood Residence had a total of nine mechanisms. Every mechanism that you passed would have a corresponding reward.

If one could break through the final mechanism, they would obtain the greatest opportunity.

And the legendary Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort that could give life to the flesh and bones of a dead person was said to be the reward after solving the final mechanism.

"To open Xian's Wood Residence—is not at all easy." Nangong Liuyun stared fixedly at Rong Yun and slowly stated.

Rong Yun nodded faintly, his gaze gentle and pensive: "To open Xian's Wood Residence—indeed, it's not easy.

He looked at the still unconscious Su Luo with a tone that carried a soft sigh: "The difficulty of this matter lies with Luo girl."

Don't know which important person had drawn up these rules, Xian's Wood Residence's rules were strange and abnormal.

Want to pass through the barrier, only a male and female formed pair could enter. A single person simply was unable to pass through the barrier.

Moreover, one must personally obtain the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort with

their own hands. Only this way would it be tamed and one could truly obtain the best medicinal effect.

Above all, everything pointed to Su Luo. If they wanted to save Su Luo's life, she had to personally go and challenge the mechanisms in Xian's Wood Residence.

Don't know if it was because these rules provoked her, Su Luo's tightly closed eyes moved slightly.

Those thick eyelashes that were thin as cicada's wings fanned slightly, then slowly opened.

"Luo Luo!" Nangong Liuyun's cold and stiff face was excited momentarily.

His movements were fast yet gentle as he helped Su Luo up, letting her lean against his chest.

After being unconscious for so many days, Su Luo finally regained consciousness.

"Master..." The first thing Su Luo saw was Grandmaster Rong Yun standing before her.

She only realized at this time that the words coming out of her mouth were hoarse and deeply muddled, a low sound that was like a cat's meow.

It was as if her throat was being squeezed by a huge invisible hand. It was extremely difficult to even say one word.

Rong Yun waved his hands: "You're very weak right now. Don't say any more. Come, first swallow these pills."

Rong Yun took out a delicately embroidered case from his chest pocket. He opened the embroidered case and inside it was a snow-white pill.

This was a Grandmaster grade Vitality Pill.

The Vitality Pill was a good medicine for replenishing life force.

If it was placed outside, every Grandmaster grade Vitality Pill would be priceless. However, who told her family's master to be a Grandmaster Apothecary? This priceless treasure was eaten by Su Luo as if it was a bean

candy.

It's just that Su Luo's body was truly very weak. Even after she had taken the Grandmaster grade Vitality Pill, very quickly she fell into a coma again.

Nangong Liuyun's eyes were filled with tenderness and heartache. He gently placed Su Luo back on the bed and carefully covered her with a quilt.

"Is there another way?" He gazed gently at Su Luo, but his words were directed at Rong Yun.

Rong Yun sighed, his gaze pensive as it moved swiftly. "Xian's Wood Residence requires a male and female pair to challenge it. Otherwise, you can't even enter."

During his younger days, Grandmaster Rong Yun had gone in with a colleague to challenge it. Therefore, he understood it much better than Nangong Liuyun.

"Luo Luo will not be able to endure it." Nangong Liuyun's fluid glance lingered on Su Luo's body, his face full of tenderness reflected by waves of sunlight, "I can't possibly let Luo Luo take the risk."

Rong Yun shook his head faintly. Similarly, his gaze also looked at Su Luo who had fallen into a coma again, "If you don't go, she'll die ten out of ten times; if you go, she still has a chance to live."

"You have the heart to watch such a frail Luo Luo go and risk her life? If you do this, how can you face her mother?" Nangong Liuyun's eyes exposed a radiance that was malicious and sharp.

Nangong Liuyun always did things quickly, ruthlessly, and accurately.

With just half a sentence, he had tightly seized Rong Yun's heart.

Chapter 1005 – To save and treat Su Luo (3)

Looking at the face on the bed that bore a striking resemblance to that person, an agonised expression appeared in Rong Yun's eyes which had always been tranquil and calm. He sucked in a deep breath and his expression restored to the calm one from before: "Apart from this, there is no other way."

After he finished speaking, his figure had already disappeared.

Nangong Liuyun stared blankly, stumped for words, and his gaze fell on Su Luo who was fast asleep on the bed.

Su Luo's sleep seemed very restless, with her long shapely eyebrows knitted slightly. Her expression carried a faint trace of suffering.

In such a short period of time, her body had thinned down by an entire circle, just looking at her made him feel extremely pained.

Nangong Liuyun sat by her side and held her hand tightly with a pained and determined appearance: "Luo Luo, you'll definitely be fine!"

She'll definitely be fine!

Ultimately, Nangong Liuyun still agreed to Rong Yun's suggestion.

To go to Xian's Wood Residence—there's no other option for him to choose from.

However, to open the Xian's Wood Residence wasn't something Rong Yun alone had the final say on.

Want to open Xian's Wood Residence, the four keys must be turned at the same time. And these four keys were in the hands of several major powers from the present age.

Purgatory City had one.

Jade Lake's Li Family had one.

Beichen's aristocratic family had one.

There was still the one with Luoyu Palace Hall's Luo family.

Only after gathering together these four keys would he be able to open the front gate to Xian's Wood Residence.

Only like this would he get a chance to challenge the nine different palace halls in Xian's Wood Residence.

That very night, Rong Yun left Cloud Mist Peak.

Three days later, he returned.

The face that was always distinctly cold like jade carried a trace of exhaustion. However, his expression also seemed as if a heavy weight was lifted off his mind.

"This matter should not be delayed. After seven days, you'll set out on this journey." Rong Yun stood with his hands behind his back, distinctly cold like the wind.

"Seven days?" Nangong Liuyun frowned.

Seven days was too soon. Right now, Su Luo was still dizzy. Only after taking a Vitality Pill did she become somewhat clear-headed.

Rong Yun waved his hand: "Carry her and follow me."

Finished speaking, Rong Yun took the lead and began to step away. Without looking back, he headed toward his refining room.

These last couple of days, aside from dealing with the matter of the four keys, he had also gone to gather several kinds of herbs that he had been fixated on for a long time.

At this time, Su Luo had already regained consciousness.

She opened her misty and fascinated eyes to seize up her surroundings.

Master's refining room, regardless of whether it was the layout or the lighting, was extremely similar to Fairy Yan Xia's.

No, it should be said that Fairy Yan Xia's refining room was built as a complete carbon copy of Master's refining room.

A medicinal cauldron that was as tall as a person, with fire below that was like snakes dancing and swallowing, and the roasting hot flames spreading continuously.

Along the foot of the wall, there were rows of various large-and small-sized medicine containers. Because they were tightly sealed with oak corks, Su Luo could not distinguish which drug ingredients were inside them.

Rong Yun lifted up the third medicine bucket and poured all the juice inside the bucket into the medicinal cauldron.

When the medicinal juice met the boiling hot medicinal cauldron, a rich, sweet scent immediately started to fill the air.

"Carry her to sit inside." Rong Yun said to Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun knew that Rong Yun was treating Su Luo, and without raising any objections, he did it according to Rong Yun's instructions.

"Want to cook me again?" Although Su Luo's body was weak, but her mind was very sober.

Last time, she had nearly collapsed from being cooked in the old witch Fairy Yan Xia's medicinal cauldron, that still left her with lingering fear, ah.

Nangong Liuyun indulgently and lovingly pinched her now peeled-thin little face with a tender smile and said: "Master knows what he is doing. Don't be anxious."

Such a soft chatting tone... counting through the people in the whole world, Nangong Liuyun would only use this tone on Su Luo alone.

Rong Yun's light-as-a-feather gaze landed on Nangong Liuyun's body.

He stood with his hands behind his back and his robe dancing lightly, appearing distinctly cold and distant, pushing people away to a distance of five hundred kilometers.

But at this moment, the gaze he used to look at Nangong Liuyun carried a touch of appreciation.

No matter how good a person's innate skills were or how high they had cultivated to, they still might not be able to obtain Rong Yun's appreciation.

What Rong Yun appreciated was Nangong Liuyun's affection for Su Luo.

Chapter 1006 – To save and treat Su Luo (4)

Medicine refining room.

Inside, one after another brilliant night pearls were dazzling and bright.

Now, the rich sweet fragrance of medicine assailed the nostrils.

After Su Luo entered the medicinal cauldron, Rong Yun had put in another three kinds of medicinal herbs.

These three stalks of medicinal herbs, in the secular world, every stalk was priceless. It had a price but no market, but in front of Rong Yun, it was merely a stalk of medicinal herb.

A clean and complicated vein pattern was curved on top of the medicinal cauldron, it seemed archaic and mysterious at the same time.

But precisely because of these ancient line patterns, it allowed Su Luo to stay smoothly inside the medicinal cauldron without worrying about being cooked thoroughly.

Certainly, Fairy Yan Xia's ability to inscribe matrix spells naturally couldn't be compared to Rong Yun, thus her medicinal cauldron didn't have this ability.

"Stay in the medicinal cauldron for seven days, after seven days, your body will have improved a bit." Grandmaster Rong Yun looked at Su Luo's face for a split second, his eyes blurring slightly.

Su Luo leaned weakly against the wall of the medicinal cauldron, a shallow smile appearing on her face: "Troubled Master for all the effort, cough, cough —"

"Don't need to say more, circulate your spirit force to heal, it's best that you absorb all of these medicine." Rong Yun frowned, "If only I had Seven Step Smiling Flower, then it would be perfect, unfortunately...."

He knew that Yan Xia had it, however, he had walked through her one hundred and eight secret training bases, searched everywhere, and couldn't find that Seven Step Smiling Flower. It really was regretful.

Just when Rong Yun was about to leave, Su Luo called out to stop him.

“Master that....is it this....”

Su Luo's body was very weak, just using her space once had consumed a lot of her strength.

She opened her hand and a clear green-colored flower appeared in her palm.

Su Luo's hand was extremely thin and shriveled, it looked as if there was merely one layer, only skin and bones.

A person's heart would give birth to pity and tenderness just seeing her emaciated body.

Rong Yun's gaze turned away from her wrist to the palm of her hand.

“Eh?” At this moment, his eyes lit up immediately.

He hastily walked two steps to arrive in front of Su Luo, took that strange-colored flower and couldn't help but to look towards Su Luo: “This flower...”

Even he couldn't find this flower, how did Luo girl get it?

Su Luo coughed twice, with a splendid smile that was very pleased with herself: “The old witch Yan Xia chased after me to kill me...because I stole her medicine chest...cough, cough, cough...”

Su Luo recalled at that time when old witch Yan Xia took a nap, and how she was pretending to be a maid. Then, the matter of her stealing the medicinal chest.

The more she thought about it, the funnier it seemed.

Grandmaster Rong Yun smiled, in a spoiling manner, he rubbed her head: “It's best that things ended up like this. You keep this Seven Step Smiling Flower, every two hours, you should eat one of the flower petals.”

Seven Step Smiling Flower could purify the impurities in the medication.

Currently, Su Luo was very weak, if the impurities in the medication was

purified, it would be even easier for her to absorb, otherwise, she it would be like her swallow the drugs whole.

Even if they were the best drug ingredients, she would still have wasted more than half of it.

But now, it was great, with this stalk of Seven Step Smiling Flower, then this problem was resolved.

Rong Yun bitterly smiled and shook his head.

Even injured to this degree, Luo girl's luck was still without a match.

Just casually taking out a flower, and it was a high grade spirit grass.

When Rong Yun was leaving, his gaze shot towards Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun turned a blind eye to him. He walked to a place about three meters away from the medicinal cauldron, sat down cross-legged and started to cultivate.

Rong Yun nodded his head, turned around and left.

With Nangong Liuyun at her side taking care of her, he felt much more reassured.

Rong Yun left the refining room, and his figure disappeared in place.

No one knew where he, as the only Grandmaster level Apothecary of the present age, went to.

Speaking of Su Luo here.

The last time Su Luo was shut in a medicinal cauldron to be cooked, those circumstances were really too hair-raising.

However, this time, there wasn't even a bit of danger.

Right now, Su Luo was comfortably leaning against the wall of the medicinal cauldron, so leisurely and carefree, as if soaking in a hot spring.

Chapter 1007 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (1)

Su Luo, this time, soaked for seven days.

The seventh day arrived and Nangong Liuyun opened his pair of eyes punctually.

Outside came the light sounds of footsteps.

Rong Yun pushed open the door and entered, seeing that the situation hadn’t fallen out of his control, he then nodded slightly.

Su Luo sat cross-legged in the medicinal cauldron, she had entered a meditative state.

She had maintained this posture for a full seven days.

Surrounding her body, there was an endless spirit force moving around then moving through, allowing the spirit force to permeate throughout the area.

Even though Su Luo’s body was seriously injured, but her soul had been cultivating non-stop.

Also, because her body was seriously injured and her soul had split off to cultivate, it resulted in her rapidly progressing in the Spirit Dance Steps.

But no matter how fast she improved, it was still useless. With the current health of her body, she simply could not endure the impact of using the Spirit Dance Steps.

Rong Yun opened the lid of the medicinal cauldron.

Su Luo slowly stopped her cultivation and lifted her eyes to look.

Rong Yun’s normally clear and cold expression now contained a light smile.

His pitch-black as ink eyes looked at Su Luo with deep concern: “Extend your hand over here.”

Su Luo extended her hand to let Master take her pulse.

When Rong Yun was taking her pulse, Nangong Liuyun’s gaze stared unblinkingly at Rong Yun’s face, afraid of missing any thread of information on his face.

Rong Yun’s expression was still the same as before, after quite a while, he nodded slightly: “Passably good.”

Able to make Grandmaster Rong Yun say these two words, was not easy.

Nangong Liuyun’s tense heart loosened slightly, his hand reaching out to hold Su Luo.

Su Luo shook her head: “It’s nothing, I can do it by myself.”

After all, she was also a stately sixth rank, how could she not be able to even walk?

Su Luo supported herself against the copper wall and slowly stood up.

Nangong Liuyun nervously watched her, with an expression as if he was facing a great enemy.

No, even when facing a great enemy, our Highness Prince Jin still wouldn’t be this nervous.

Su Luo slowly stood up, just when she was about to stand up straight——

Suddenly, she felt her legs soften, an invisible pressure coming from her legs.

Su Luo suddenly felt powerless from being unable to control her legs.

The foot she stood on with great difficulty directly started to slide.

The moment when Su Luo was about to sit in the medicinal soup again. Nangong Liuyun, who was watching on the side, fished with his long arm and folded around Su Luo’s lovely and slender waist.

In an instant, the dripping wet Su Luo had already fallen into his embrace.

“Go wash, don’t catch a cold. Now, your body is very weak.” Rong Yun looked

at Nangong Liuyun hugging Su Luo and frowned slightly.

Seeing Nangong Liuyun familiarly carry Su Luo while walking away, Rong Yun suddenly had a gloomy feeling of being a father and having his own daughter being snatched away by another person.

After washing, Su Luo changed into clean clothes and was placed on the bed by Nangong Liuyun like a precious treasure.

“I’m not that weak...” Because of moving her body, Su Luo grasped slightly for breath.

After bathing in medicine for seven days, her body was indeed somewhat better than before, at least, she was able to converse normally and not lose consciousness as often.

Nangong Liuyun’s pitch-black eyes stared at Su Luo, just like that, gazing deeply at her.

“What?” Su Luo innocently blinked her eyes.

At this moment, she was leaning on a pillow, while Nangong Liuyun stood by her bedside. She lifted her eyes slightly and asked suspiciously.

Nangong Liuyun suddenly took a few steps forward, and his long body squated down, staying just like that by her side.

His head was buried deeply, not allowing people to clearly see the expression on his face.

Su Luo quietly looked at him and didn’t speak.

After a long time, Nangong Liuyun sucked in a deep breath, his voice was muffled and had a trace of hoarseness, “Luo Luo....I’m sorry.”

His face that was hanging down wouldn’t allow people to see the pain and suffering on his face.

Because of the matter before, now, he solemnly apologized to her.

Chapter 1008 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (2)

When she was awake, he finally said this sentence. These days those words that he wanted to say made it difficult for him to stay calm.

His Luo Luo could finally hear the apology from his heart.

Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun in a daze.

The scene from that day appeared in her head.

Nangong Liuyun had turned around and left, back then, his back appeared determined, without a trace of turning back around.

In the torrents of rain, her thin and weak figure, wept in despair....

Su Luo muttered a little to herself, her slender jade hand gently stroked his hair, and she softly said: “That day, I also had places where I was wrong, can’t blame it all on you.”

“No, I was wrong.” Nangong Liuyun lifted his eyes, he who always appeared distant and indifferent, now displayed tender feelings that were quite touching.

Su Luo smiled bitterly and shook her head: “Nangong, I was wrong at that time, if I didn’t hesitate and hold back, then you wouldn’t have misunderstood.”

“Luo Luo——” Nangong Liuyun’s tone was gentle and low, his clearly jointed hand tightly gripped Su Luo’s hand. Two lonely hearts intertwined closely, from two, becoming one.

“I really regret it.” Nangong Liuyun sat on the bedside, tightly hugging Su Luo to his chest. His chin was placed on her head and slowly narrated.

“If that day, I could be a little more patient, restrain my temper a little more, you wouldn’t....”

Just recalling Su Luo having been wounded to such a degree by the old witch Yan Xia, the blue veins on Nangong Liuyun's face that was fine as beautiful porcelain burst out, appearing ruthless and malevolent.

"Master has already killed that old witch Yan Xia." Su Luo smiled faintly, her smile bright and cheerful.

"I didn't personally kill her." Nangong Liuyun said very regretfully.

Su Luo looked at the elegantly dressed Nangong Liuyun who brought out the most noble and refined appearance, and she smiled: "No harm, in any case, she is already dead."

"However, Ouyang Yunqi still hasn't died!" Nangong Liuyun's fist clenched tightly.

Right now, his gaze was abstruse and ice-cold, giving off a bone-chilling cold aura. His face had an insufferable, arrogant and strong aggressiveness.

Su Luo's heart tightened slightly.

It could clearly be seen, in front of her, that arrogant and noble Nangong Liuyun, a king among men, was really concerned about Yun Qi.

Even though he didn't ask about it, that didn't mean he didn't want to know.

That day, he was angered to such a degree, it could clearly be seen how much he cared. Only now, she was heavily wounded and couldn't get up, so he had to painstakingly suppress it right?

Master had mentioned before that Yun Qi had entered the demonic path. Now, even Master couldn't find his whereabouts.

But one day, Yun Qi will definitely return as a king among experts, when that time comes...

Su Luo took a deep breath and drew Nangong Liuyun's hand to her, her gaze calmly looked at him: "Do you believe me?"

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head without the slightest hesitation: "I believe you"

No matter what Su Luo said, he would believe everything.

No matter what Luo Luo wanted, as long as he had it, it was hers.

This was the oath Nangong Liuyun had made to himself the last time, when he saw Su Luo on the verge of death.

Su Luo looked at the Nangong Liuyun before her eyes.

Currently, it was exactly when the sun was setting in the west. Among the faint afterglow of the setting sun his beautiful jet-black hair fell down in torrents like poured ink. It landed on his sculpted shoulders, making his entire person seem demonically charming, soft and dazzling.

Such male perfection, now, there was a possibility she could lose him....

Su Luo pursed her thin, dark red lips, and finally made a firm decision: "Then it's time I tell you about the matter from before."

Rather than let Yun Qi insert another foot in in the future, it would be better to come out and reveal everything. At that time, if Nangong Liuyun could not accept it....then it was better to get the pain over with than prolong the agony.

Seeing Su Luo's very serious face, Nangong Liuyun unexpectedly felt hesitant: "If it is difficult to say...."

Chapter 1009 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (3)

“No.” Su Luo shook her head, her gaze was unprecedented resolute, “It’s time to tell you, and after you know the truth, whether you stay or leave...you decide for yourself.”

Nangong Liuyun’s gaze was deep, demonically charming and soft, as well as enigmatic and unpredictable. With that burning gaze, he stared at Su Luo, not saying a word.

His gaze was too bright, as if in front of him, all the secrets would have nowhere to hide.

Su Luo avoided his gaze in the next instant and slowly said: “Do you believe that reincarnation exists in this world?”

Reincarnation?

If someone else had said this, Nangong Liuyun naturally would not believe them.

That was how absurd of a matter?

However, these words came from Su Luo’s mouth, for a moment, he wavered.

“Nangong, believe me, on this earth, there is the matter of reincarnation.” Su Luo determinedly watched him, her gaze dazzling and sharp, “I clearly remember matters that happened in my previous life. From childhood till I became an adult, I could tell you everything that happened.”

Nangong Liuyun’s complexion did not change, but the hand holding Su Luo’s tightened slightly.

Su Luo gripped back and firmly nodded: “That world was completely different

from this one. That was a planet with a civilization very advanced in science and technology.”

Nangong Liuyun was like an invisible person not speaking, but people still couldn't ignore his strong existence.

Su Luo watched him and slowly said: “That world had airplanes, trains, cars, extracted steel and cement...”

Su Luo told him about the situation in that world once through, seeing Nangong Liuyun looking extremely confused, she couldn't help but give voice to her laughter.

“I met Yun Qi in that other world.” Su Luo controlled her expression while appearing very serious as she looked at Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun's expression turned gloomy, ruthless and brash in an instant. His thick, sharp eyebrows knotted tightly.

Since she already said it, Su Luo finished saying everything in one breath: “In that world, I and Yun Qi...were indeed together.”

Nangong Liuyun's complexion was ashen, his thin lips pursed into a straight line.

Su Luo bit down on her teeth and simply said it all at once.

“That matter with a child also really existed, only, at the final moment, Yun Qi's dagger stabbed here.” Su Luo pointed to her stomach and slowly said, “In order for him to win recognition and success, he sacrificed us without the slightest hesitation.”

Although Su Luo's tone played down the matter, however, a betrayal that tore the heart and split the lungs wasn't something you say had passed, and could really let it pass.

These matters that Su Luo said really were hard to believe, moreover, it was unimaginable.

When Nangong Liuyun heard of her and Yun Qi's past, he really was jealous to the extreme.

However, when Su Luo talked about that scene of betrayal, when she used

such an insipid and light tone to describe the scenario, Nangong Liuyun's heart clenched tightly together.

The afterglow of the setting sun gradually scattered, inside the room was pitch-black. Neither of them went to light a candle.

Nangong Liuyun reclined on the mattress, with his sleek as silk fine hair falling down in torrents. In the darkness, his expression switched suddenly from gloomy to bright in an indeterminate manner, while being enigmatic. No one knew what he was thinking about.

Su Luo quietly had her eyes lowered, waiting for his answer.

This was her past that she was unable to destroy. She had already gotten over it, but don't know what he would think about it.

If he does mind, then it will end here.

If he doesn't mind, afterwards, she will certainly stay with him and be true.

Su Luo's eyes hung down, waiting for his verdict.

Time passed one minute and one second at a time.

Inside the room, time was still.

Appearing to be a deathly stillness.

Suddenly, Nangong Liuyun signed deeply, and his long arms fished over, tightly pulling Su Luo into his embrace.

He placed his chin on top of her head, that innate arrogance of his, so noble and domineering, disappeared without a trace in this moment.

"Luo Luo, I believe you." Five simple words which were full of endless affection and love.

Chapter 1010 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (4)

He said he believed her?

Su Luo’s eyes suddenly lit up, and her pale and sickly face immediately looked radiant.

“Nangong...” The always strong Su Luo had a faint moistness in her eyes.

According to his violent, nefarious and ruthless temperament, shouldn’t he have left in a violent rage without ever looking back?

Nangong Liuyun released her, his pair of black pupils staring attentively at Su Luo.

A pair of penetrating pupils glistened brilliantly like a hungry wolf’s in the grasslands. His faintly hungry eyes were chilly, sharp and full of desire.

Su Luo looked straight at him, neither too fast nor too slow.

Nangong Liuyun bent down and suddenly scooped her slender waist into his embrace, bringing her in front of his own body.

A feverish kiss, that was earth-shattering, domineering and powerful, but was also intoxicatingly tender.

Paying attention to Su Luo’s weak body, Nangong Liuyun stopped after a short time.

He cupped her cheeks, the two faces leaning very close to each other. A silver thread was drawn out when the their pair of lips separated.

An ambiguous atmosphere started to permeate within the room, as if an intoxicating scent was in the air.

Inside was still, with only the sound of their breathing.

“Luo Luo.” Nangong Liuyun’s voice was damn sexy right now, low and demonically charming.

Two red petal-like clouds flew upon Su Luo’s cheeks that were previously pale as paper. The blush floated faintly on her cheeks.

“Luo Luo, I like you.” Nangong Liuyun’s gaze was unprecedentedly serious and firm.

Su Luo’s heart squeezed a little.

“Always, in the past, I firmly believed that the person who would stand by my side must be you.” Nangong Liuyun quietly looked at her with a serious and grave expression.

Su Luo’s heart became somewhat nervous from being stared by him.

Such a resolute and naked confession, made it somewhat difficult for her to digest.

Nangong Liuyun also seemed to realize that it was somewhat embarrassing. He quietly coughed once, his face failed to live up to his expectations and was a little red, blushing with shame.

After all, confessing to a young lady in such a deadly earnest manner was also his first time, just like a young woman entering the marriage litter.

Nangong Liuyun continued to say: “Always, in the past, I was accustomed to being alone, moreover, I believed I would be alone for the rest of my life. However, you just suddenly appeared like that, attracting my entire gaze.”

Su Luo didn’t utter a word, but she had a smile on her face that encouraged him to continue.

He continued to confess his feeling: “You are the first girl that I decided to pursue, also the first girl I hugged, the first girl I kissed. A lot of my first times were all yours.”

Su Luo bit down on her teeth.

Recalling the first time she met him, and those actions he took on top of the

tree, because he seemed quite familiar with them, her mouth couldn't help but to purse.

This guy's first time was done in such a way as if he had a lot of practice.

Nangong Liuyun, with one hand covering the corner of his mouth, gave a dry cough and continued to confess his feelings: "Owing to having no knowledge of dealing with relationships, so I didn't have any previous experience to draw upon, to the extent that I would always do something to upset you. I really am very sorry for that."

Su Luo shook her head and was just about to speak, but Nangong Liuyun used a single finger to seal her lips.

"Because I had no experience, I always made you angry, and let you get injured, but...in this lifetime, I, Nangong Liuyun, firmly believe that it has to be you."

Nangong Liuyun gripped Su Luo's hand, his gaze was firm, clear, and unswervingly determined: "Therefore, Luo Luo, are you willing to continue walking down this road with me?"

His tone was tranquil, however, his pair of hands that was trembling slightly divulged his nervousness.

For a moment, Su Luo froze in place, being stumped for words.

She never expected that this man who was arrogant to the point of being in complete shambles, cruel, untamed, and considered himself to be matchless in the entire world. One day, he would lower his voice and arrogance to confess to her and wait in apprehension for her answer.

"You..." Su Luo paused.

At this moment, her heart was like wine that had been aged for a long time, a bit sweet and sour, also with a thread of warmth and romanticism that was hard to describe.

Chapter 1011 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (5)

“You really don’t care about my past?” Su Luo stared fixedly at him, she did not wish that one day, he would bring this out to settle this old account.

“The previous life’s matter was already finished, I only know the you in this life.” Nangong Liuyun firmly looked at her.

That’s right ah, the past, just let it pass.

Su Luo quietly gazed at him, suddenly, something quick-witted appeared, and she said a verse from a television show’s dialogue.

“Nangong Liuyun, since this is your choice, then you listen to what I’m about to say.” Su Luo’s eyes were exceptionally serious.

Nangong Liuyun was scared by Su Luo’s tone until his heart throbbed violently.

He calmly looked at Su Luo, but his tightly clenched fists divulged the nervousness in his heart.

“You say it.”

No matter what her answer would be, he would still pursue relentlessly, pester her, and strike until the end.

Want him to let go? Only if he dies.

Su Luo watched Nangong Liuyun and, enunciating each word clearly, said: “If you never leave, I will reciprocate and be with you through life and death.”

Nangong Liuyun’s face stiffened for a second, momentarily, his eyes shone

brightly.

His body was stiff as an icicle, motionless, to the extent of not knowing how to react.

Su Luo lifted her hands to wave it in front of his eyes: “Give me a little reaction okay?”

Otherwise, she would feel that her own confession was being refused, it was really embarrassing okay?

Su Luo’s voice called Nangong Liuyun back to his senses.

“Luo Luo!” Nangong Liuyun, in one reach, grabbed both of Su Luo’s hands, his strength so great as to be astonishing.

Su Luo immediately sucked in a breath of cold air: “Release my hands!”

Her hands were nearly squeezed into pieces.

Nangong Liuyun hurriedly released her hands, but the excitement in his eyes didn’t lessen a bit.

That incredulously disbelieving expression was also ecstatic from being moved, to the extent that his stiff body, which then loosened, was trembling slightly.

All these reactions landed in Su Luo’s eyes without missing an iota.

“You said we will never leave each other and rely on each other through life and death?” Nangong Liuyun’s pair of outrageously beautiful eyes, right now, was like an ignited flame, bright and dazzling.

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth had a smile as she faintly nodded.

“Just now the wind was too loud, I didn’t hear it clearly, say it again!” Nangong Liuyun could not conceal the happiness at the corner of his mouth, and requested it in a childishly stubborn manner.

The image of Nangong Liuyun being so deeply bleak and lonesome when she had lost consciousness appeared in Su Luo’s mind, making her heart turn faintly astringent.

She nodded her head, with a shallow smile in her eyes, she looked into his

deep eyes. She stressed each word as she firmly repeated: “If you never leave, I will reciprocate and be with you through life and death. Nangong Liuyun, let’s be together.”

Nangong Liuyun immediately was so happy that he became foolish!

He put Su Luo aside and with a ‘whoosh’ sound, rushed out!

But because he was too excited, with a ‘bang’ sound, his body unexpectedly bumped into the doorframe.

What level of cultivation did Nangong Liuyun have? How could that doorframe withstand being bumped by his whole strength?

Momentarily, the doorframe, with a crashing sound, fell to the floor.

The doorframe, with part of the wall, fell backwards like a mahjong tile.

Nangong Liuyun jumped from the fright, he hurriedly flew in and carried Su Luo to rush out.

He ran several hundred meters in succession, before halting his footsteps.

The violent sound of a house collapsing even drew Zi Ran out.

“Little Junior Sister, this house...” Zi Ran looked at the house that had collapsed into rubble and was immediately flabbergasted.

Master had secretly reinforced Little Junior Sister’s courtyard oh, just what kind of attack would smash it so thoroughly?

Now, Su Luo was carried in Nangong Liuyun’s arms, and she foolishly and blankly watched everything in front of her eyes.

Only when Zi Ran’s voice sounded, did she awaken, and her thoughts returned to reality.

Su Luo looked at Zi Ran, then again lifted her head to look at Nangong Liuyun...

Nangong Liuyun’s forehead that was as clear and bright as jade was a little bit red.

All of a sudden, Su Luo couldn’t bear it and started to laugh uproariously: “Hahaha... Hahahaha...”

Chapter 1012 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (6)

Hearing Su Luo bursting out laughter, an embarrassed color appeared on Nangong Liuyun’s face.

“Stomach.... Hurts... Ha ha ha...” Su Luo who was being held by Nangong Liuyun laughed so hard her stomach nearly cramped up.

If she was lying on a bed, she’d be rolling around with laughter.

At that time, our poor His Highness Prince Jin was not only being made fun of. He also had to help the future Princess Jin who laughed until she couldn’t breath, to rub her stomach that was aching because she laughed too much.

“Is it a little better?” Nangong Liuyun looked at Su Luo at a loss.

Su Luo clasped her belly, choked back her laughter, and nodded her head earnestly.

Zi Ran who was on the side inserted a sentence in a timely manner: “Little Junior Sister, how did this house collapse, ah? After you left, Master specifically placed a matrix spell so that not even an eighth or ninth rank’s attacks could destroy it.”

Su Luo’s abdomen shook, clearly she was extremely uncomfortable from holding back the laughter.

Zi Ran once again circled around the house that collapsed in puzzlement, he frowned while walking: “How could it have started to collapse from the doorframe?”

Su Luo worked so hard to stifle it, but with Zi Ran’s earnest appearance of probing for the actual facts made it so Su Luo couldn’t restrain it anymore. With

a 'pfft' sound she couldn't help but to howl with laughter once again.

While she laughed she also hammered on Nangong Liuyun's strong and perfect chest.

Too funny, it was really too funny. Su Luo couldn't stop the tears from laughing so hard.

Right now, Nangong Liuyun's entire face was black.

He coughed once gloomily.

Zi Ran also not-so-discreetly walked closer: "Little Junior Sister, why are you laughing? Does this mean you know the truth?"

Nangong Liuyun's face was so black that water could drip out. He coldly reprimanded: "Shut up!"

Nangong Liuyun with a gloomy face, his entire body emitted a coldness that prevent a stranger from approaching .

Zi Ran quieted down immediately, stood in place, staring blankly not daring to take another step forward.

He was also not stupid, he could guess some of it from the Su Luo's meaningful winks.

A man who flew into a rage from humiliation was not scary, but a tenth ranked strong expert shamed into anger was absolutely terrifying to the extreme.

As a result Zi Ran earnestly sent off Nangong Liuyun with his eyes as he left holding Su Luo.

Only his body was trembling because of trying to stifle the laughter, so it was spasming.

Nangong Liuyun's beautiful sharp eyebrows knit, face inviolably stern.

Su Luo saw him like this and started to laugh again.

"Is it that funny?" Nangong Liuyun's eyebrows were knotted.

"Mhm mhm." Su Luo pursed her lips and nodded her head hurriedly.

“You, ah.” Nangong Liuyun placed Su Luo the western wing’s guest room, and extended a finger to tap her nose.

The main house had collapsed, but the western wing was barely adequate for a person to enter.

“Nangong Liuyun, you’re too cute.” Su Luo pulled down his head, with a smack sound from a kiss she left a clear mark on his face.

Nangong Liuyun was immediately struck dumb.

After doing something so stupid, he still get this kind of treatment?

Su Luo cupped his flawlessly handsome face and sighed emotionally: “I, Su Luo, by what virtues and abilities did I make you fall in love with me?”

“Luo Luo.” Nangong Liuyun’s eyes which were cold as millennium-old snow now shone with starlight speckles of happiness and joy.

“Nangong Liuyun, you are mine!” Su Luo branded his lips with hers, “Seal done, can not back out!”

The smile at the corner of Nangong Liuyun’s lips flowed over, his heart was stuffed full of happiness, not allowing anything else to squeeze in.

“Okay, I am yours.” Nangong Liuyun nodded his head obediently, like a docile fierce looking tiger.

“Later on the outside, you are not allowed to fool around.” Su Luo scowled coldly, seizing this opportunity to take the city, establishing an unfair-but-favourable-to-her clause in this agreement.

Chapter 1013 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (7)

When it comes to love, the more you loved, the more passive you were, and vice versa.

So, in this war of love, Su Luo held absolute power and authority.

Nangong Liuyun smiled from ear to ear and nodded his head: “This king wants only you alone.”

“There is still that Li Yaoyao, you deal with it properly.” Su Luo gave a heavy snort.

Just how much trouble had this Li Yaoyao brought Su Luo?

At the heart of this matter was Nangong Liuyun this source of calamity.

Nangong Liuyun raised his hand and swore: “I will definitely deal with it properly, I have to.”

From the moment she hurt his family’s treasured Luo girl, she had taken the road to her death with no way back.

Seeing Su Luo thinking with her head tilted and those round eyes turning in circles, Nangong Liuyun felt that his family’s treasured Luo girl was too adorable.

“What other conditions do you have, tell me all of it now.” Nangong Liuyun curiously and generously waved his hand.

“For the time being I haven’t thought of it.” Su Luo thought about it for a really long time, but still couldn’t come up with anything.

It was all because Nangong Liuyun had always spoiled and pampered her to the extremes since the beginning, making it impossible for her to find a bone to

pick with him.

The two people confided to each other.

This was the first time they both had clearly expressed their own feelings to each other.

After the confessions, the vague, hazy and blurred feelings were finally certain.

“Luo Luo, let’s get married after returning from Xian’s Wood Residence, okay?” Nangong Liuyun gazed at her determinedly with deep emotions, his beautiful eyes were full of expectations.

He had never wished for nor hoped for that day to come as much as now.

Was Nangong Liuyun proposing to her right now?

Su Luo’s body was startled as she stared blankly. She looked at him somewhat in disbelief.

“This... isn’t it a bit too fast?” Su Luo’s brain short-circuited.

They had just figured out their feelings, and to get married now? Wasn’t it a bit too fast?

Nangong Liuyun thought that Su Luo was unwilling, so he didn’t make it difficult for her. He smilingly stroked her soft hair and said: “Everything will be done according to your wishes, as long as you’re always by this king’s side, then this king had nothing else he want to ask for.”

How difficult was it for Nangong Liuyun to say these words?

In his entire life, only with Su Luo would he be so sincere and held nothing back.

“We will always, always, be together.” Su Luo saw the slight disappointment deep in his eyes, finally, she still nodded her head, “Okay, once we return from Xian’s Wood Residence, we’ll get married.”

But the nine different palaces in the Xian’s Wood Residence was famous for how difficult it was to challenge them. So to pass all nine challenges was even more difficult.

Could they really obtain the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort? Could it really fix her broken body?

Everything was still uncertain.

While chatting, because Su Luo's body didn't have enough physical strength to continue her eyes closed tightly and she sank into deep sleep.

Nangong Liuyun sat on the bed, tenderly and carefully caressed her hair.

"Luo Luo, believe in me, everything will get better." He tone was as steady as a boulder.

"No matter what, I will have you cured!" Nangong Liuyun's determination was exceptionally firm.

A night without speaking.

Early morning the next day, with the first glimmer of dawn's light, Rong Yun appeared inside the room.

"This is a hundred Vitality Pills." Master Rong Yun took out a palm-sized white jade bottle from his sleeve, and handed it over to Su Luo.

"Master, this..." Su Luo was somewhat stunned.

These were Grandmaster grade Vitality Pills ah, just take one of this out would make the strong experts fight over it.

But now, her family's Beautiful Teacher had given her a whole bottle.

With regards to his esteemed person these Vitality Pills like a bottle of jelly beans right?

Before that bottle didn't have much, but now, this bottle had a total of a hundred pills.

Chapter 1014 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (8)

Rong Yun was as indifferent as the wind, and he stood there with his hands clasped behind his back, his white silk robe flowing gracefully in the wind.

He had a faint worried expression on his face: “This trip to Xian’s Wood Residence is very far away, your body is still too weak.”

Rong Yun turned his gaze towards Nangong Liuyun, with a serious expression that was imposing and reserved said: “Now, I have entrusted Luo Luo to you, if she has so much as a tiny mishap when you return, humph!”

Nangong Liuyun’s luxurious fiery red velvet robe made him appear distinguished, domineering, demonically charming and enigmatic.

His cold black eyes, were as coldly remote as a deep pool, and with his light pink-colored thin lips pulled into a straight line, he coldly vowed: “Whoever dares to hurt Luo Luo, will need to tread over my dead body!”

The usually scheming and farsighted His Highness Prince Jin was this courageous and ruthless. He raised his dignified head arrogantly, appearing absolutely dominant.

“Hm.” Rong Yun only gave a faint hum and did not say anything else.

A promise between men only required a tacitly understood meaningful glance.

The inherent arrogance and nobility make it hard for people like him to get off their high horse and to swear such a vow to keep a promise.

But Nangong Liuyun accomplished this point for Su Luo, it was already remarkable enough.

“Then go.” Rong Yun waved his hand, when his beautiful eyes looked towards Su Luo, it flashed.

“Well then, Master, we will be going.” Su Luo, who was wrapped in Nangong Liuyun’s arms, waved her hand in a reluctant-to-leave manner.

“Hm.” Rong Yun nodded his head in an amiable manner, so pure and cold like a remote and aloof god.

The summit of Cloud Mist Peak, the gentle wind blew at the corner of his robes, making it flutter in the wind.

His expression was so enigmatic that no one could understand it.

Watching as Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo down the mountain, until only a tiny black dot was visible, a trace of worry appeared in Rong Yun’s eyes.

Xian’s Wood Residence was in the north, a place in the extreme north.

Nangong Liuyun carried a map Rong Yun had given him.

On this journey, in order to give Su Luo a steady place to rest, Nangong Liuyun brought his Dragon Scaled Horse along.

The horse carriage went around the Huan Mountains, through the territory of the Northern Mo, and continued all the way northwards.

Now, it was already early winter.

The north was usually a bitterly cold place, in this season, it had already gradually started to become cold.

When they were exiting Northern Mo, Nangong Liuyun had bought a bunch of winter clothing for Su Luo.

Fox fur, wolf fur, leopard fur.... very thick woolen and velvet blanket, a very thick tent and so on.

These things were all neatly stored in his Space Bag.

No matter how cold the day, he was completely unaffected, but his Luo Luo couldn’t stand the slightest blow from the wind and couldn’t deal with even a little bit of cold.

Originally, His Highness Prince Jin who had always been waited upon, when

had he ever done things to take care of somebody else?

But circumstances could indeed temper a person.

The current Nangong Liuyun took very proper care of Su Luo, not missing a single detail.

Having travelled for about another ten days, the weather gradually turned cold, heavy snow fell from the sky.

Su Luo's fragile body was wrapped tightly in fox fur, a thick leopard fur hat covered her head, only exposing a pair of beautiful pitch-black eyes.

That pair of eyes, in the middle of a snowstorm, looked even more clear in contrast, clear as water.

The sky gradually darkened.

Nangong Liuyun found a place with a huge boulder blocking the wind and set up the tent. He then spread out a thick soft fleece blanket, and only then did he carry Su Luo from the carriage and into the tent.

"I can walk by myself." Su Luo protested quietly.

Ever since receiving such heavy injuries, her foot hasn't touched the ground, she was always carried by Nangong Liuyun from here to there.

Nangong Liuyun's dark eyebrows rose slightly, but he reproached in all seriousness: "Look at your body, how can you walk by yourself? What if you fall?"

Only heaven knew how much he enjoyed so openly and honorably hugging her warm and sweet self to his chest, he wouldn't exchange it for all the things in the world.

Chapter 1015 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (9)

Su Luo was carried into the warm tent, then he used a thick cloak to wrap tightly around Su Luo again, who already had another layer that bound her into a cocoon.

Su Luo had no other choice, she turned her pale face up and said in a small grumbling voice: “So hot...”

Nangong Liuyun kept a straight face, his serious tone penetrated with pampering accents: “Just like this, your body cannot handle any cold. Unless you want to keep on coughing non-stop like before?”

The matter from before, whenever Nangong Liuyun recalled it, he still had lingering fears.

After the first snow, the sun shone brightly, Su Luo, this girl, took off her fur clothing, but with a light gust of wind, she got a serious chill and started coughing non-stop.

Nangong Liuyun carried her around Northern Mo city in search of a doctor, in the end, our ruthless Highness Prince Jin directly kidnapped the imperial physician.

After taking medicine for several days, Su Luo eventually got a little better.

But this incident left Nangong Liuyun with a hard-to-erase feeling of remorse.

Ever since, he watched over Su Luo very strictly, spoiling her like a wife and a daughter, however, if it concerned Su Luo’s body, he refused to yield an inch and was very obstinate about it.

Su Luo also remembered that incident, so she didn’t persist. She merely laid

on the soft mattress, smilingly watched Nangong Liuyun as he bustled about.

His Highness Prince Jin, the embodiment of five great men, what was he so busy doing?

The well-read and intelligent His Highness Prince Jin, usually with a wave of his hand, a person's head would drop to the ground. The always brilliant in determining the outcome of his battles from afar, that His Highness Prince Jin, was now in the process of cleaning his hand and making Su Luo some soup.

Normally, in this kind of weather, he could hunt a prey, then roast it over a fire, smear on a layer of chili paste and cumin on top, this was the quickest and most convenient meal.

Only, how could he let the injured Su Luo eat this kind of coarse food? Our Highness Prince Jin was determined not to allow it.

At this time, Nangong Liuyun had already set up a wooden frame, with a small cooking pot hanging from it. Inside the little iron pot, was full of top quality rice that gave off an alluring fragrance.

Along the way, Nangong Liuyun, who had never set foot in a kitchen, had been trained to have a great set of cooking skills.

Because Su Luo was a picky eater.

She could tell if those foods had a pinch too much salt or lacking a single Sichuan peppercorn.

Under the iron pot, the fire burned just right. In the iron pot, the rice congee cooked neither too slow nor too fast.

With the sun setting in the West, a curtain of darkness gradually descended.

Soon, the world seemed to be covered with a fine black gauze, so misty things couldn't be seen through clearly.

The snowstorm also gradually died down, leaving the surroundings terrifyingly quiet.

The rice congee finished boiling, and Nangong Liuyun took out a delicate porcelain bowl, spooning a small bowl of congee. He then let Su Luo cup the bowl with her hands to drink slowly.

“It’s not bad.” Su Luo nodded her head in satisfaction.

Nangong Liuyun’s pair of pitch-black dark eyes immediately looked like the stars in the night sky, sparkling brightly.

“As long as you like it, that’s good.” Nangong Liuyun said in gratification.

However, the expression on his face suddenly turned cold for a moment.

Su Luo, seeing he was displeased, asked him in confusion: “What’s wrong?”

Nangong Liuyun smilingly patted her head: “It’s nothing, merely some people with too much time on their hands, there’s no need to pay them any heed.”

Nangong Liuyun said it offhandedly, but Su Luo didn’t consider it to be that way.

In this season, braving the snowstorm to go all the way to the extreme north, how could it be just any ordinary people?

Amidst Su Luo’s bewilderment, two silhouettes appeared in front of them.

One was leading.

One could see him dressed in a blue robe that danced lightly in the wind.

He had dashing eyebrows and sparkling eyes on a handsome outstanding face. His facial features were gentle and educated, but did not lose the strength of a man.

Chapter 1016 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (10)

A young lady stood next to him.

This girl wore a golden silk dress, she was clear as ice and clean as jade, just like a fairy.

She had a pair of sparkling and clear, jade-like eyes. Her skin was like congealed amber, white but penetrated through with a touch of pink. Her smile was fresh and touching, so beautiful that people would be infatuated.

When she saw this young lady, Su Luo’s hands that was holding the porcelain bowl paused slightly.

The Jade Lake’s fairy....

Why would she be here?

Li Yaoyao recognized Nangong Liuyun in one glance, without being called over, she automatically approached close to him on her own.

“Third Senior Brother, such a coincidence to actually encounter you here.”

Li Yaoyao usually had an aloof and cold face, when she saw Nangong Liuyun, it lit up like the fireworks in March, so bright and dazzling.

Nangong Liuyun’s sharp eyebrows knotted coldly.

He did not forget the agreement he had made with Su Luo from before.

Among them, Li Yaoyao was a typical example. Her name was specially pointed out and warned against.

Li Yaoyao’s smiling expression was sweet-tempered and amiable, as if all the previous unpleasantness had vanished completely.

“Third Senior Brother, it smells really delicious, did you personally make this congee?” Li Yaoyao acted as if no one else was present, stepping close to Nangong Liuyun’s side in an intimate and enthusiastic manner. It was as if their relationship was very intimate.

Nangong Liuyun frowned, he carried Su Luo and took a step away from her.

Li Yaoyao’s expression darkened slightly, but very quickly, her fighting spirit was once again ignited.

“Ah, Third Senior Brother, who are you carrying?” A sharp light flashed through Li Yaoyao’s eyes.

It was because Su Luo was bundled up like a small plump bear, and the hat on her head hung very low, nearly blocking her whole face. In addition to the illumination right now being low, so Li Yaoyao momentarily didn’t recognize her.

Nangong Liuyun scanned her with his eyes in annoyance, with a brittle, cold tone, he said straightforwardly: “You’re not welcomed here.”

Li Yaoyao’s body suddenly stiffened for a bit.

She looked like she wanted to sob from being wronged, almost about to cry but did not cry, appearing extremely pitiful.

The man behind her came forward and was about to say something, but was stopped by Li Yaoyao.

Li Yaoyao looked at Nangong Liuyun and forced herself to look happy: “Third Senior Brother, the matter before, Yaoyao was wrong, Yaoyao knows she is wrong...”

Nangong Liuyun’s eyebrows knotted even more deeply.

Because now, that little gal in his arms, precisely that Su Luo, who looked like a small plump bear, had just pinched the meat on Nangong Liuyun’s lean waist.

“Enough, knowing you were wrong is your thing, whether I forgive or not is my thing.” Nangong Liuyun impatiently waved his hand, and turned around, wanting to put the troublesome little gal in his arms back into the tent.

At this time, having heard what he said, Li Yaoyao’s beautiful complexion

became increasingly pale, and her body seemed to be on the verge of collapse.

She quickly stepped up to Nangong Liuyun, reaching out to pull him to a stop.

“Third Senior Brother, you, how could you be like this? In which place am I not better when compared to that Su Luo?” Two distinct teardrops rolled down Li Yaoyao’s eyes, “Never mind the rest, at least, I look a hundred times better than her, right? How could it be that you refuse yo even to glance at me?”

However, before her hands could even touch Nangong Liuyun’s robe, one could see him pulled a distance away from her, so she came up empty.

Previously, Third Senior Brother was so close and intimate with her, now, he refused to even look at her. He wouldn’t even let her get close to him?

Once she thought about these changes, Li Yaoyao felt extremely wronged, her eye sockets filling with tears.

“Why?!” Li Yaoyao yelled bitterly in anger, “Third Senior Brother, why did our relationship change to be like this? I’m not reconciled, really not reconciled!”

From when she started to understand stuff, she was determined it would be Third Senior Brother. She had firmly believed he would ride on the Dragon Scaled Horse as the groom to escort her marriage litter.

However, why did it now change to be like this?

Chapter 1017 – Traveling to Xian’s Wood Residence (11)

“How is Su Luo better than me? Is she as gifted as me? Can she advance in cultivation faster than me? Is her family background better than mine? Is she prettier than me?!” Li Yaoyao yelled out in a row while crying at the same time, “To lose to her, I really am not reconciled, extremely unreconciled!”

Nangong Liuyun’s fists clenched tightly.

His Luo Luo was the best girl in this entire world, Li Yaoayo couldn’t even be compared to one of her fingernails, how could she have the face to rant so loudly here?

As a result, our Highness Prince Jin send a confused glanced at Li Yaoyao. His voice cold as ice, lacking a trace of emotion: “You are not reconciled, what does it have to do with me?”

You are not reconciled, what does it have to do with me?

These few simple and clear words coldly and ruthlessly shut Li Yaoayo out completely.

In the world of emotions, complete indifference hurt people the most.

Now, Nangong Liuyun, without holding back in the least, displayed his indifference and complete lack of regard for her feelings.

“...” Li Yaoyao’s figure swayed, tottering on the verge of collapsing.

The man who was behind her had his eyebrows knotted tightly, he looked at Nangong Liuyun with displeasure: “Third Junior Brother, you have changed.”

Nangong Liuyun’s indifferent gaze shot towards Situ Ming.

“This matter doesn’t concern you.” Nangong Liuyun frowned.

Situ Ming was Nangong Liuyun's and Li Yaoyao's fellow student under the same teacher, ranked second.

Normally, he was warm and friendly, calm and controlled. He was always respected among Teacher's fellow brother and sister students.

"Third Junior Brother, no matter what is said, Yaoyao is still your fellow junior sister that grew up with you. Your words and behavior right now make a person feel bitterly disappointed." Situ Ming expressed his displeasure.

When he said this sentence, Situ Ming's gaze coldly shot towards Nangong Liuyun's arms.

Su Luo was bundled up tightly so Situ Ming couldn't see her clearly. However, instinctively, he didn't like the girl in Third Junior Brother's arms.

How sharp and perceptive was Nangong Liuyun's senses, with just one glance from Situ Ming, he knew the other side didn't like Su Luo.

His Luo Luo, he wanted to spoil and pamper her to the point of giving her the entire world to play with. But now, his Second Senior Brother unexpectedly didn't like Luo Luo.

Our Highness Prince Jin wasn't happy.

And his anger naturally was drawn towards Li Yaoyao's body.

"When words are sour, saying more is useless, we'll leave." Nangong Liuyun said coldly.

If right now, Li Yaoyao wasn't carrying the Jade Lake's Palace's key and Situ Ming didn't have the Purgatory City's key on his body, based on His Highness Prince Jin's arrogance, he wouldn't let them go so easily.

However, when His Highness Prince Jin retreated half a step, the other side seemed to have no intention of retreating, instead, they inched closer.

Li Yaoyao's attention was all directed at the plump girl in Nangong Liuyun's arms.

"Who is she?" Li Yaoyao's body didn't move, but a thread of blame was audible in her voice.

Why didn't she ponder a bit, what right did she have to criticize Nangong Liuyun for carrying another woman in his arms?

Situ Ming also didn't leave, he stood firmly by Li Yaoyao's side, becoming her strongest support.

From childhood to adult, Situ Ming was like an older brother, unconditionally forgiving, indulging and spoiling Li Yaoyao.

Because, from the very early in the beginning, he had started to like her.

Because Li Yaoyao liked Nangong Liuyun, the magnanimous Situ Ming voluntarily conceded, and even gave his blessing in a heartfelt manner.

But one day, Li Yaoyao cried while telling him that Nangong Liuyun didn't want her and he was snatched away by another woman.

In Situ Ming's eyes, this otherworldly and uncommon Jade Lake's fairy was like a goddess to him.

How could he allow his goddess to be wronged? Even if Nangong Liuyun was the junior brother he thought most highly of, however, compared to his goddess, how could a junior brother's worth be comparable?

Chapter 1018 – Sudden change in travel plans (1)

As a result, when Li Yaoyao asked him to accompany her to Xian's Wood Residence, Situ Ming agreed on the spot.

“Nangong, who are you carrying in your arms?” Seeing that Nangong Liuyun only coldly sneered at Li Yaoyao's question, Situ Ming frowned and immediately followed with another questioning sentence.

Situ Ming was smart, he could somewhat guess at who Nangong Liuyun was carrying in his arms.

Li Yaoyao also stared at Nangong Liuyun anxiously.

Nangong Liuyun's arms that was wrapped around Su Luo tightened some more, his eyebrows furrowing even deeper.

His Luo girl right now was so weak, she couldn't be subjected to even a bit of grievance.

Nangong Liuyun's speaking speed wasn't slow nor fast, but still sounded chilly and threatening: “You guys don't need to know, nor do you have the qualification to know.”

A touch of annoyance slipped past Situ Ming's face.

Although before, Third Junior Brother was cold and detached, he would never be this rude. In the end, who was in his arms that would make him this nervous?

Li Yaoyao, because she had Situ Ming's support, took a few steps to walk to the front of Nangong Liuyun. Her sharp gaze stared at the figure in his arms.

Su Luo faintly sighed in her heart.

That pair of eyes, was sharp as cold blades, as if they could penetrate through the heavy fur to shoot straight into her heart.

Being provoked like this, if Su Luo continued to be like an ostrich seeking protection in Nangong Liuyun's arms, then what qualification did she have to stand shoulder to shoulder with Nangong Liuyun?

Let alone it was in front of Li Yaoyao?

Su Luo's jet black eyes shone slightly, a sharp ray of light flashing past without notice.

Su Luo moved her hand, and pulled down her furry hat, revealing an ill but unearthly beautiful face!

Seeing this suffocatingly beautiful face, Li Yaoyao felt her throat clog up as she subconsciously took half a step back.

This person...

One could only see these exceptionally beautiful delicate facial features, especially that pair of eyes, so watery and moving.

That very elastic skin was sparkling and translucent as snow, delicate like fine porcelain, with qualities that was out of this world, elegant like a fairy.

Li Yaoyao had always bragged that she was the most beautiful woman in the world, but having seen this face, she suddenly felt unworthy and inferior.

Such a familiar face, especially that pair of eyes, dazzling like a sharp sword, glittering as if she could see clearly into people's heart.

These clearly were Su Luo's eyes.

But this face!!!

An intense sense of uneasiness struck her, Li Yaoyao only felt as if the world was spinning, her vision blurred, her entire body trembled!

"You, who are you in the end?" Li Yaoyao held onto that last thread of hope.

No, it can't be her... absolutely cannot be Su Luo, that little slut!

Last time, she only had a hasty glance at Fairy Yan Xia's place. In the gloomy light, she couldn't see clearly.

But now...their eyes met, she could clearly see every detail on Su Luo's face.

Li Yaoyao's pair of hands clenched tightly into fists. Her pair of eyes stared fixedly, with rapt attention while holding her breath, finding it hard to believe.

Su Luo was calm and naturally relaxed, she repeatedly laughed shallowly, so graceful and subdued, allowing Li Yaoyao to look.

"Miss Li, long time no see, you actually didn't recognize me?" Su Luo's eyes were calm and peaceful, with a perfectly composed expression.

Hearing this familiar voice, Li Yaoyao could only feel her heart tremble!

Her eyes opened wide from disbelief, her whole body starting to tremble, both of her fists clenched even tighter!

"The last time, Miss Li was corroded by a strong acid, now you don't look any different, really fortunate oh." Su Luo laughed gracefully and generously.

Li Yaoyao tightly bit down on her lower lip, nearly drawing blood!

If she still couldn't recognize who the person in front of her was, then she could immediately go and hit herself against a wall!

Su Luo!

It actually really was that slut!

How did she become so pretty, so beautiful, so devastatingly gorgeous, so exquisitely noble?

Chapter 1019 – Sudden change in travel plans (2)

“Su Luo, you really are the person that old witch was looking for!” Li Yaoyao fumed with rage between gritted teeth.

Jealousy, her eyes were filled with crazed jealousy.

Only, it was a great pity that that old witch had already died. Otherwise, she could have used her to get rid of Su Luo.

Su Luo’s eyes roamed around, her lips curling into a sneer: “That’s right, who my mother is, you might also have known?”

Su Luo’s mother, back then, was a goddess-like majesty of renown in the world, who didn’t know her, who didn’t let her be known?

Her Majesty Yan Hua, with a wave of her hands, ships would turn to ashes and smoke. With a command from her, countless number of strong experts would follow her through hell and high water.

At that time, she was the leader of the entire continent, with numerous followers, how could a small Jade Lake’s Li family contend against her?

Su Luo’s words were like a sharp sword, stabbing deeply into Li Yaoyao’s chest.

Just now, she had loudly shouted, being unconvinced, that she was prettier than Su Luo, the result was her feeling inferior.

Just now, her heart was unreconciled and she boasted about her strong background. But now, her entire Jade Lake’s Li family couldn’t be compared to

even one of Su Luo mom's finger.

Li Yaoayo choked on her own words, momentarily, she stood in place, stumped for words. Her chest moved up and down violently.

However, she was so distracted that she couldn't even utter a word.

At this moment, Situ Ming stared at Su Luo's appearance, his shock wasn't less than Li Yaoyao's.

Master had always carried a small human-shaped wood carving with him, he had seen it once by accident, that face was exactly the same as the face of this lady in front of him!

Master treated that wooden carving like his greatest treasure, before, someone from another sect accidentally saw it, and Master dug out his eyes!

Master was normally kind, but as long as matters touches upon that wooden carving, he would change into a completely different person!

Insane, stubbornly biased, unreasonable!

Now, this girl in front of him had the exact same face as the wooden carving.

Situ Ming's face suddenly became gloomy then clear, his deep gaze unfathomable, with a complicated expression.

Nobody knew what he was thinking of.

Nangong Liuyun was unhappy, he took the thick warm hat and placed it back on Su Luo's head. His reproachful tone carried traces of spoiling flavor: "Who told you to take it off? What if you catch a cold?"

Su Luo stuck out her tongue and smiled while revealing two dimples: "Am I really that delicate?"

"How healthy do you think you are now?" Nangong Liuyun poked at her bright and clean forehead.

"Didn't Miss Li insist on knowing who I was since the beginning? If I don't let her look, then she won't give up." Su Luo rubbed against Nangong Liuyun's chest, like a languid kitten.

The two people talked as if no other person was present, but it made Li

Yaoyao's face become stiff.

Damn it!

Were they putting on a display of affection in front of her? Would they die if they didn't flaunt it?

Li Yaoyao was so furious that she nearly spit out blood.

But in just the blink of an eye, Su Luo, who she had originally looked down upon like dirt, changed shape in a single shake, from that ugly duckling to a graceful white swan!

Not only had her appearance changed, there was also her whole new terrifying identity and background. All of this made Li Yaoyao deeply jealous of her!

In front of her, everything clearly stated that Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo was a perfect heavenly pair. Simply a match made in heaven.

As for her, she looked just like a bouncing clown with her own wishful thinking...

Was she going to give up just like this? Li Yaoyao's heart was filled with sadness.

No, absolutely not! An unwavering determined light flashed through Li Yaoyao's eyes.

From childhood till now, her mind was set on Nangong Liuyun. Without him, what meaning did the endless road of life have for her in the future?

Therefore, no matter how bitter or how tiring, she would never give up!

Li Yaoyao took a deep breath, and was thus able to dislodge that unpleasantness in her chest.

Chapter 1020 – Sudden change in travel plans (3)

She squeezed out a smile, with that broad smile on her face, she turned to Su Luo and said: “When Miss Su was expelled from Su Manor, at that time, I even felt sorry for you. But it turned out that Miss Su is from Her Majesty Yan Hua’s bloodline, congratulations, congratulations.”

Su Luo’s eyes narrowed slightly.

Li Yaoyao had changed.

The originally cold and arrogant Li Yaoyao, who disdained and was contemptuous of other people, had now become smooth and slick, knowing when to strike to have everything go her way.

The cold and arrogant Li Yaoyao was easy to handle, because she had principles and a bottom line.

But the her right now had changed a lot.

How to be unequalled in the entire world? So she would be invincible.

Li Yaoyao simply didn’t have any principles or a bottom line now, she pursued Nangong Liuyun in a bigot manner, completely disregarding her reputation.

This kind of person was the worst to deal with.

However, Su Luo was only a little more guarded in her heart.

Su Luo laughed indifferently: “Miss Li really felt sorry for me? Why is it that I heard back then, when Su Zian expelled me from Su Manor, it was because of Miss Li’s orders?”

Li Yaoyao’s face didn’t change, she shook her head: “Miss Su is mistaken, how could it be my doing? This is absolutely impossible.”

Su Luo gave a sneer, and she leaned against Nangong Liuyun's chest, disinclined to pay more attention to her.

Now, Li Yaoyao already had no shame to speak off, flaunting her snappy retorts was meaningless. Why should she waste any more precious strength to argue with her?

Especially since the man Li Yaoyao wanted the most was holding her.

The victor ought to be a bit more tolerant towards the loser.

As a result, Su Luo laughed a little and rubbed herself against Nangong Liuyun's chest again .

An exceptional man, Nangong Liuyun immediately asked lovingly and with deep concern: "Girl, what's wrong? Are you not comfortable?"

His gaze was worried and anxious, his mood nervous and uneasy.

Li Yaoyao did not hesitate to sacrifice her life to have him turn back to glance at her, but Nangong Liuyun's entire heart was fastened on Su Luo's body. He became endlessly nervous because of one light cough from her.

Su Luo contemptibly swept Li Yaoyao a glance, both hands wrapping familiarly around Nangong Liuyun's neck.

Li Yaoyao bit tightly down on her lower lip, with eyes that nearly spit out a raging flame.

"Muah." Su Luo pulled Nangong Liuyun's head down and placed a firm kiss on his face.

Nangong Liuyun was startled, then he immediately smiled in a dim-witted manner.

This was Luo Luo's way of declaring her sovereignty over him to the outside world, how could Nangong Liuyun not be happy?

Li Yaoyao felt so much hatred that she nearly broke her gums from biting down! With her fists clenched firmly, the sound of bones popping could clearly be heard.

Li Yaoyao took a deep breath, she must remain cool-headed.

If she let herself be led by the nose by Su Luo, that slut, Third Senior Brother would become more and more estranged with her.

Li Yaoayo's eyes darted around randomly, very quickly, she noticed the iron pot hanging above a wooden frame.

In the iron pot, the high quality rice was boiled into congee, emitting an alluring fragrance.

After a difficult day on the road, just how pleasurable was it to eat a mouthful of warm congee?

Li Yaoyao very quickly changed the topic: "Has Miss Su finished eating dinner?"

An empty delicate porcelain bowl was over there, probably left by Su Luo.

The corners of Su Luo's mouth pulled up: "Miss Li hasn't eaten yet?"

Su Luo immediately could see through Li Yaoyao's intentions.

Li Yaoyao had her intentions placed on the congee, right?

Sure enough, Li Yaoayo sat down in Nangong Liuyun's original position, and reached for the empty bowl.

"When we were little, the sweet potatoes Third Senior Brother roasted were very fragrant and sweet. I didn't expect that the congee he cooked would be so fragrant as well." Li Yaoyao rudely helped herself and ladled out some congee.

A trace of annoyance flashed across Su Luo's face.

Chapter 1021 – Sudden change in travel plans (4)

If it was anything else, she definitely wouldn't be so stingy, but this congee was personally cooked by Nangong Liuyun. It was made with love, how could she share it with other people?

Let alone that other person being her love rival Li Yaoyao?

Situ Ming looked at Li Yaoyao, then glanced at Nangong Liuyun again. He laughed shallowly and lifted up his robe to take a seat next to Li Yaoyao.

“Traveling through the wind and snow for a day, I really am somewhat tired. Since Third Junior Brother has already eaten, then we are picking up some conveniences with this congee. Traveling outside, to be able to eat some hot congee, is really a kind of pleasure on its own.”

Situ Ming's smile was clear and shallow while carrying a hint of criticism: “Third Junior Brother, these things should be done by the female. Doing it yourself really is beneath a man's dignity.”

Saying this, his gaze unhurriedly swept Su Luo a glance.

Su Luo, with the identity of being a descendent of the goddess, gave birth to restrained fear in his heart. She also gave birth to an indescribable loathing in his heart. .

This Situ Ming, was he scolding her indirectly?

Su Luo's eyebrows furrowed slightly, but before she could react, Nangong Liuyun had already made his move.

“Crack!”

A clear and crisp sound echoed.

The porcelain bowl full of congee that was in Li Yaoyao's hands actually cracked in following the sound.

The congee splattered over her pink skirt, staining it, making her look exceedingly disheveled.

Li Yaoyao's eyes opened wide in disbelief!

Third Senior Brother actually... wouldn't even give her a mouthful of congee to eat... boo hoo...

Li Yaoyao's eyes immediately turned red, sparkling clear tears rolled around in her eye sockets as if she wanted to cry, looking exceedingly pitiful.

Situ Ming suddenly stood up, his eyes were deeply cold as he glared at Nangong Liuyun.

His entire body emitted flames of wrath.

"Nangong Liuyun, you went over the line!" Situ Ming was always a gentle and good person. This was the first time he used such a serious tone to reproach Nangong Liuyun.

"Second Senior Brother, this doesn't concern you." Nangong Liuyun frowned in annoyance.

Second Senior Brother didn't have any bad intentions, it's just that his two eyes had been deceived, unable to distinguish right from wrong. Nangong Liuyun was also too lazy to explain it to him.

"Second Senior Brother, boo hoo... you don't... it's my own problem..." Li Yaoyao cried like raindrops on pear blossoms, inciting people to take pity on her.

Her crying like this, completely stirred up Situ Ming's tender and protective feelings for the fairer sex.

Situ Ming pulled Li Yaoyao a few steps to walk in front of Nangong Liuyun, his gaze giving off a piercing cold light: "Nangong, you look clearly, she is Yaoyao, she is your childhood sweetheart that grew up with you. She had entrusted the rest of her life to you, treating you as a close relative! Now, because of some random girl, you actually treat Yaoyao like this, you simply.... simply... are

unreasonable!

Nangong Liuyun's phoenix eyes narrowed, the corners of his mouth pulling into a cold and cruel sneer.

Although he was smiling, his smile didn't reach his eyes. Those indifferent eyes reflected a gloomy cold light.

Nangong Liuyun slowly placed Su Luo on the ground, with a warm gentle smile, he tightened the collar of Su Luo's clothing, and lifted an eyebrow in a demonically charming manner: "Be obedient and stand here, okay?"

Su Luo's eyes had a complicated expression.

Based on her understanding of Nangong Liuyun, this guy was really angry now.

Usually, the more languid, the more refined and cultivated he was, the scarier he would be when he exploded.

"Nangong..." Su Luo pulled at his hand.

At one glance, it could be seen that Situ Ming's strength wasn't ordinary, also, they studied under the same teacher. The matter of brothers from the same teacher destroying each other, no matter whose body it occurred on, it still was not a good thing.

Su Luo was somewhat depressed. Could it be, she really was a femme fatale?

"Be obedient, you must believe that your man is unrivaled in this world. There's no one who can harm him." Nangong Liuyun's smile was warm and intoxicating, like the cherry blossoms in March, resplendent and dazzling.

Chapter 1022 – Sudden change in travel plans (5)

After taking care of Su Luo, Nangong Liuyun took a step forward.

At this moment, Nangong Liuyun's tall figure stood loftily upright, his arrogant, pitch-black eyes flashed with a unique sharp edge that looked down disdainfully at the whole world. His outline was cold and resolute, the outline of his jaw defined arrogance and nobility.

He just stood like that, conceited and insufferably arrogant, as he cast sidelong glances at Situ Ming. His tone was indifferent and ice-cold: "Just now, what did you say?"

Situ Ming's chest blocked up.

What did he say? He merely asked Nangong not to wound Yaoyao for a random woman.

Nangong Liuyun grabbed Situ Ming by the collar, lifting him up. His eyes narrowed dangerously and warned him while clearly enunciating each word: "Situ Ming, I respect you as my senior brother, so I'll forget about those words from just now. If there is a second time, don't blame me for becoming hostile!"

Now, Nangong Liuyun's whole body emitted a furious aura, containing endless chilliness and harshness.

Domineering and strong! Not tolerating another opinion! Insufferably arrogant!

So cool! Simply awesome!

If it wasn't for the fact that the current atmosphere was unsuitable, Su Luo would have even wanted to whistle.

Her Nangong really was simply too cool, even when he was emitting a furious aura, he was still so cool as to defy nature.

Situ Ming was clearly scared stiff by Nangong Liuyun.

The expression on his face was very complicated, there was wrath, there was helplessness, but mostly, it was disbelief.

He completely didn't expect that Third Junior Brother could speak such heartless words.

Nangong Liuyun's dark pupils were sharp as a hawk's, completely relentless.

He threw aside Situ Ming, turned around to carry Su Luo and left with large strides.

"Third Senior Brother, how could you treat Second Senior Brother like this? How could you treat us like this....." Li Yaoyao wept beautifully, looking as if she had been extremely wronged.

She rushed up, wanting to pull at Nangong Liuyun, but was swept back by a wave of his hand.

"Li Yaoyao." Nangong's whole body was covered in a layer of frost. His entire body was penetrated with chillness, he paused a bit and finally opened his mouth to say, "Don't think other people are all fools."

Li Yaoyao momentarily stared blankly with a complexion that was pale as snow.

Nangong Liuyun's starlike eyes were malicious as he indifferently gazed at Li Yaoyao: "Before, those things you did to Luo Luo, don't assume I don't know."

Under his murderous gaze, Li Yaoyao subconsciously took a step back.

Her heart panicked and turned into a mess, don't know what ought be done? She wanted to explain, yet with the words on the tip of her tongue, she discovered that she basically had no excuse.

"If there is a next time, I'll kill you without discussion!"

Nangong Liuyun, who had already entered the ranks of the exceptionally strong at twenty years old, absolutely had such confidence and aggressiveness.

Li Yaoyao's entire person wasn't good.

This was still the first time Third Senior Brother had so clearly and simply expressed his loathing.

His gaze was so sharp and coldly detached, cruel and heartless, absolutely without a touch of feelings remaining.

Not only did he plainly and openly refuse her, he also warned her that by continuing, she'd lose her life.

Li Yaoyao simply didn't need to act, her tears immediately welled up like spring water, unable to be stopped.

At this moment, she only felt cold water flow down from the top of her head, making her feel a cold that penetrated through to her heart and lungs.

"If, I said if....." Li Yaoyao, choking with emotion, gazed at Nangong Liuyun with red-rimmed eyes: "If I was truly to move against Su Luo, would you really kill me?"

Not only Li Yaoyao, but now, Situ Ming was also glaring at Nangong Liuyun with grief and indignation.

Su Luo was also quietly gazing at Nangong Liuyun.

From Su Luo's line of sight on the side, she could see Nangong Liuyun's handsome side profile.

At this moment, the lines of his face were stretched taut, his face arrogant and ice-cold, with a solemn and very serious expression.

"Yes."

Nangong Liuyun's answer.....was firm, straightforward, resolute and showed no quarter.

Chapter 1023 – Sudden change in travel plans (6)

Li Yaoyao's body swayed, momentarily unable to stand still, she fell backwards.

Situ Ming's eyes and hands were quick, he caught Li Yaoyao with one grab.

"Yaoyao! Yaoyao!" Seeing Li Yaoyao with her eyes tightly closed, Situ Ming raised his eyes to glare at Nangong Liuyun with anger and bitterness, "You've gone too far! She merely likes you, that's all!"

Nangong Liuyun coldly sneered: "Likes? She likes me, then, she can harm my Luo Luo?"

On one side was Li Yaoyao who had fainted from anger, the other side was his Luo Luo, who was placed at the tip of his heart This treatment was really like the difference between the clouds and the mud.

Situ Ming furiously roared: "Nangong Liuyun, you and Li Yaoyao had grown up together since childhood, she's so kind-hearted, how could she possibly harm the girl in your arms?"

Nangong Liuyun cast a disdainful glance at Situ Ming: "Second Senior Brother, your eyes are blind, but it does not mean mine are blind too."

"You——" Situ Ming was angered in his heart and it was full of bitterness.

Su Luo shook her head, forcing a smile.

Situ Ming's pair of eyes had been blinded by Li Yaoyao's sincere and kind-hearted exterior. If he knew that the first time Li Yaoyao saw her, she had dispatched a small group of subordinates to chase and kill her. Don't know if he would feel the despair of being disillusioned with his goddess.

Nangong Liuyun indifferently looked at Situ Ming: “On this journey, manage your junior sister well.”

Nangong Liuyun’s pitch-black eyes were cold, pure and threatening, he was enveloped from head to toe in the dignity of a strong expert.

Finished speaking, Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo and left with large strides.

His embrace was warm like the spring, with steps steady like pine trees. The overbearingness on his body was the kind that caused a person to be intoxicated.

Nangong Liuyun completely pursued one principle.

That was: to treat enemies mercilessly like the autumn wind sweeping away the fallen leaves; to treat one’s love warmly like the spring.

Nangong Liuyun, who had just now given off a biting cold murderous air, after he entered the tent, he immediately transformed into a meek sheep.

This poles apart treatment, no wonder Li Yaoyao would directly faint from being angered.

“Be obedient, have a good night’s sleep, tomorrow, early in the morning, we still have to hasten on our way.” Nangong Liuyun gathered Su Luo’s collar together and wrapped her into a ball.

Su Luo’s clear eyes gazed at him, suddenly, she moved up and gave him a firm kiss on his face.

Simultaneously, she gave him a thumbs up: “Nangong Liuyun, you are simply too wonderful!”

How fortunate was she, that this lifetime, she could obtain this man’s wholehearted love.

To attack the rival in love was originally her duty. However, Nangong Liuyun had taken on all the responsibility by himself, to avoid wasting a bit of her attention.

This kind of man, even if he was placed in the entire world, he should still be one-of-a-kind, right?

Nangong Liuyun's pair of eyes glistened brightly, his sculpted facial features were bright as starlight.

Praised by the one he loved, Nangong Liuyun's heart felt very sweet.

His rubbed Su Luo's hair in a very good mood: "Foolish girl, I have already said it before, this lifetime, I will not let you suffer a bit of harm."

Even if it was verbal injury, he also absolutely would not allow it.

"But just now, you were truly heartless. You didn't leave her even a bit of feelings, no matter how you say it, you guys were still childhood sweethearts." Su Luo, smiling happily, said.

This girl exemplified having gotten a small advantage and flaunting it. If he dared to be amiable to Li Yaoyao, it would be a wonder if this girl didn't get angry.

Nangong's pitch-black eyes flickered like starlight, he raised his sword-like eyebrows: "What childhood sweethearts? We weren't all that familiar."

"Pfff." Su Luo let out a laugh.

This guy could seriously lie through his teeth.

"Humph, humph, not very familiar? At that time on Sunset Mountain Range, who was it that tossed me aside into a magical beast stampede to turn around to save that something-fairy?" Su Luo unhesitantly dug up the old accounts.

Chapter 1024 – Sudden change in travel plans (7)

Nangong Liuyun, a little embarrassed, touched his nose.

However, he couldn't refute those words.

The him of that time was like the current Situ Ming, deceived by Li Yaoyao's exterior pureness and kind-heartedness.

Seeing Nangong Liuyun feeling embarrassed, Su Luo very generously waved her hand: "Forget it, seeing that your behavior today was not bad, I'll forget that old account and write it off, let bygones be bygones."

Nangong Liuyun embraced Su Luo, his strong figure covered hers as he heavily seized those alluring red lips of hers.....

The distance between the tent and the bonfire was really not that far.

Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun also didn't deliberately hide their dialog.

And all the ones present were also experts with high cultivation, with sharp ears and keen eyes.

Thus, Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun's dialog was clearly transmitted to the outside.

Under Situ Ming's treatment, with great difficulty, Li Yaoyao regained consciousness. After hearing their dialog, she nearly vomited out a mouthful of blood.

Third Senior Brother actually said he was not very familiar with her..... not very familiar.....

Li Yaoyao's entire body felt unbalanced, light-headed and extremely unwell.

“Yaoyao, you.....” Situ Ming’s crystal-colored icy pupils showed a trace of deep concern, “What are you planning to do?”

Nangong Liuyun’s attitude was already very clear.

Who he liked, who he loathed, he had already made it very clear. If they pestered him again, this.....

Li Yaoyao raised her palm-sized small face, and the rims of her eyes filled with tears, she imploringly gazed at Situ Ming: “Second Senior Brother, don’t tell me you also want me to give up?”

Li Yaoyao’s eyelashes were jet-black and thick, but were moistened with specks of sparkling and translucent dewdrops. Her appearance made people take pity on her and feel extreme tenderness towards her.

Situ Ming really wanted to say, if you don’t give up, then what?

But seeing Li Yaoyao, with such a pitiful appearance, he swallowed back these words at the edge of his mouth.

“Second Senior Brother, from childhood to now, only you treated me the best. No matter what I wanted, no matter how difficult it was, Second Senior Brother would accomplish it for me, isn’t it so?” Li Yaoyao tightly pulled Situ Ming to a stop, her crystal-like eyes were full of expectation.

Situ Ming’s chest couldn’t help but feel suffocated.

“Second Senior Brother, you will help me, right?” Li Yaoyao painfully covered her chest, “If I don’t have Third Senior Brother, I might as well die.”

“Yaoyao!” Situ Ming said with emphasis.

“Second Senior Brother..... I really will die.” On Li Yaoyao’s picturesque facial features, her eyes were filled with hope.

Situ Ming had no choice, he only sighed heavily: “What do you want to do?”

Just now, the sound of Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo’s dialog could clearly be heard, that was because Nangong Liuyun deliberately did it.

However, Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming’s conversation couldn’t be transmitted out.

Because from the very beginning, Situ Ming had already set up a

soundproofing circle in their surroundings.

Li Yaoyao's curled eyelashes slightly fanned a few times, in a timid-looking and frail manner, she looked at Situ Ming: "If I could only return to the past, then how great would that be."

At that time, Third Senior Brother was very good to her. He never reproached her with any harsh words, unlike now.....

How could Situ Ming not hear clearly the hint in Li Yaoyao's words.

It was impossible to return to the past, but to return to the state it was in the past.....

If that girl called Su Luo had never appeared.....

If that girl called Su Luo would disappear without a trace.....

A ripple swept through the bottom of Situ Ming's heart, thousands of thoughts went through his head.

Li Yaoyao watched as Situ Ming racked his brain with brows creased. From an angle no one could see, the corner of her mouth slightly lifted into a shallow sneer, her vermilion red lips were alluring as blood, ice-cold and cruel.

Second Senior Brother, you must by all means not disappoint me oh.....

Chapter 1025 – Attack from the strong (1)

The next day, early in the morning.

After the first snowfall cleared, the sky was a pure azure color.

When Su Luo got up, she didn't see those two people.

"Why did they leave?" Su Luo asked in puzzlement.

She had thought that they would be together with that Jade Lake's Fairy in the journey ahead. She had already made the difficult mental preparations. But who would have thought, early in the morning, she didn't see a trace of the other side's figures.

"They left just after midnight." Nangong Liuyun helped Su Luo fasten some buttons and then carefully placed the hat over her head.

"Li Yaoyao would be so willing to leave just like this? Could it be she is scheming something?" Su Luo muttered.

Nangong Liuyun laughingly pinched Su Luo's tender cheeks: "My Luo Luo would still care about any schemes she comes up with?"

Su Luo lifted her palm-sized small face, and blinked her beautiful pitch-black eyes: "Other things, I'm not worried about, I'm just worried about you."

Nangong Liuyun laughed out loud, and tapped her bright and clean forehead: "Other things, I dare not say, but this point, I can absolutely guarantee you. Even if you were to drive me away, I won't leave."

Su Luo pursed her thin lips, she had originally wanted to feign indifference, but when her eyes met Nangong Liuyun's, they both exchanged a look and laughed.

After everything was properly tidied up, the two of them once again rushed to

the north together.

As if the appearance of Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming was like a small stone thrown into a lake, after giving rise to a very small ripple, very quickly, it vanished from sight.

The further north they traveled, the more desolate it was.

Eventually, until as far as the eyes could see, there was only a vast expanse of white.

All colors were buried in a world of ice and snow, what could be seen besides white, was still white.

At first, when entering this place of ice and snow, Su Luo was still a bit curious, but after several days in succession of the same color, she inevitably became somewhat impatient.

“There is still a distance of seven to eight days from our destination, this road is really long.” Su Luo leaned against the soft cushion, her gaze staring at the map while lost in thought.

This map was given by Master, on it, every road sign was marked in detail.

Nangong Liuyun embraced Su Luo and asked with deep concern: “Bored?”

Su Luo found a comfortable position in his embrace, contentedly reclined against him and nodded her head to say: “Dull, boring and uninteresting.”

Nangong Liuyun laughed in spite of himself.

“Dull and boring, although uninteresting, it represents safety, what’s not good about it?” Nangong Liuyun smilingly asked.

Su Luo momentarily was at a loss for words.

What Nangong Liuyun said was also not wrong, at least there wasn’t the Jade Lake’s Li family chasing to kill her. There also wasn’t old witch Yan Xia chasing to kill her.

Just when Su Luo was about to agree with Nangong Liuyun’s point of view, all of a sudden, a touch of graveness flashed across Nangong Liuyun’s face.

“What’s wrong?” Su Luo’s expression also turned grave immediately

afterwards.

“Stay in the carriage, don’t move.” Nangong Liuyun’s gaze when looking outside the carriage, was cold, hard and sharp.

Su Luo nodded slightly: “You must be careful.”

Nangong Liuyun nodded towards her, then he turned around and jumped down from the horse carriage.

Capable of making Nangong Liuyun’s kind of high expert, have restrained fear. It could clearly be seen that the other side’s strength was also not bad.

After Nangong Liuyun went out, Su Luo stayed in the horse carriage by herself.

She bent an ear to listen attentively and didn’t discover the slightest bit of movement.

After waiting for a long time, Su Luo finally used her fingertips to quietly lift up the carriage’s curtain and stealthily looked out.

In the vast expanse of snow.

Nangong Liuyun’s tall rear view, with his robes pulled by the wind, gave off a respected, domineering manner that came from within.

At this moment, he was standing upright just like that, steady and tranquil, as if he was the only person that remained in this world.

All of a sudden, a large spirit fluctuation wildly shot towards him from the distance!

Su Luo’s heart violently throbbed, she had a very bad premonition about this.

Chapter 1026 – Attack from the strong (2)

Sure enough, as Su Luo had anticipated, the situation had become very ugly.

At this moment, three magical beasts rushed down from the mountain of snow towards them.

These three magical beasts were several times larger than an elephant, with two sharp, ivory, spear point-like teeth that gave off a murderous cold light in the snow. It was sinister and frightening.

In the split second they appeared, Su Luo felt a vicious murderous intent hitting her in the face.

Her heart suddenly contracted at this moment, a sharp pain arising.

Such strong murderous intent.....

These three magical beasts were very powerful!

Just merely a release of murderous intent nearly pressured her to suffocate, her heart almost shattering into pieces!

Nangong Liuyun, with his sleeves pulled by the wind, stood motionlessly in place.

His body gave off an endless battle intent, he successfully attracted all three magical beasts' attention to him.

When the three magical beasts closed in around Nangong Liuyun to rush towards him——

Nangong Liuyun finally moved.

In the world of ice and snow, Nangong Liuyun's figure was like a wisp of light smoke, unexpectedly, he disappeared in place.

The three magical beasts looked at each other in dismay.

Very quickly, Nangong Liuyun's figure appeared in another position.

His speed was very fast, so fast as to be in the blink of an eye. He was so fast that it nearly dazzled the three magical beasts' eyes.

Nangong Liuyun, who had appeared in mid-air, suddenly brandished a double-edged sword to chop down!

Nangong Liuyun was at the beginning of tenth rank!

That sword blade, containing all the spirit power between heaven and earth. With a wave of that double-edged sword, a move seemingly average and dull, but contained the inquisitive spirit power of the world!

“Slice——”

One could only hear the sound of the double-edged sword cutting through flesh.

One of the hind legs of the magical beasts was hit by Nangong, with blood rushing up to a high height.

Nangong Liuyun's eyelids wrinkled slightly.

He used seventy percent of his power and the other side only suffered damage on a hind leg. Moreover, the hind hoof wasn't even cut off.

Could it be that those three magical beasts were

In the horse carriage, Su Luo's eyes narrowed slightly, cold sweat pouring out on her pale face, with drops of sweat falling down. Her expression was full of pain, yet doing her utmost to silently bear it.

Her right hand covered her heart, because the battle intent that strong experts gave off, with regards to the current her, was very harmful to her.

The Dragon Scaled Horse was fretful and uneasy as it stepped around in place. It howled in a low voice and whinnied.

Su Luo sighed faintly.

Nangong Liuyun's double-edged sword couldn't even behead it. Clearly, it could be seen as to how rough the other side's fur was and how thick their flesh.

With such a formidable defense, and they also lived in the extreme north.....

Apparently, these three were the kings of the Snow Lion magical beasts!

The reproduction of the Snow Lion race was extremely difficult, very few survived, however, their innate skill was very high.

With regards to its innate skill, this race could contend against the dragon race. Only, because of the small numbers, it didn't become a well-known formidable race.

Reportedly, it was said that only one snow lion was born every century. It was rumored that at birth, they were already at the fifth rank, as they grew up, breaking through the tenth rank was an easy matter for them.

Didn't expect that such rare snow lions would actually appear here. Moreover, they would even indiscriminately attack Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun.

Why was this?

As for what's happening on Nangong Liuyun's side.

Nangong Liuyun's double-edged sword chopped down, only wounding the hind leg of the largest snow lion.

This one was clearly the older brother, the two behind it were the younger brothers.

The two younger brothers saw their older brother being wounded, and their eyes turned bloodshot! Their sharp pointy teeth suddenly made a sound.

“Roar——”

The three snow lions, all in unison, simultaneously let out a world-shaking bellow.

Su Luo only felt her internal qi and blood rolling over, she abruptly spit out a mouthful of blood!

When these angry roars resounded it startled the Dragon Scaled Horse. The Dragon Scaled Horse raised its hooves up high and its survival instinct made it run forward!

Chapter 1027 – Attack from the strong (3)

Su Luo, who was inside the carriage, was knocked dizzy, swaying eastwards and falling westwards.

The pitiful her had just vomited out a mouthful of blood, she hadn't even taken a breath yet before she encountered such misfortune.

The Dragon Scaled Horse's speed was very fast, its four hooves madly rushed about in the snow!

With Su Luo's body's current condition, she simply couldn't steer the Dragon Scaled Horse!

At this moment, she couldn't even say a word, because when she opened her mouth, it would be another mouthful of blood.

Fortunately, at this critical moment, the little divine dragon dashed out.

The little divine dragon rushed out and slapped one of his claws towards the Dragon Scaled Horse!

The Dragon Scaled Horse's four hooves that were originally raised immediately paused, afterwards, its whole body softly collapsed onto the snow and laid there motionlessly.

The little divine dragon knew how far to go, so he had merely slapped the mad Dragon Scaled Horse until it fainted. It wasn't like before when he killed those black-clothed people, one slap and their head would shatter into pieces.

At this moment, Su Luo was finally able to steady her body.

“Cough cough cough—” Su Luo covered her chest and coughed until the sky spun and the ground was obscured.

Just now, there was a split second of time when it was dark before her eyes.

The heaven spun and the earth went around, she almost felt like she was on the verge of dying.

This damned broken body, don't know whether it would ever get better or not.

The little divine dragon saw Su Luo cough out mouthful after mouthful of blood, and he became extremely distressed. His little face tightened into creases and continuously circled around Su Luo.

With great difficulty, Su Luo finally was able to stop her coughing.

She gave a pale, weak smile towards the little divine dragon: "It's nothing.....I won't die yet....."

The little divine dragon's pair of big, clear monochrome eyes were misted over with water, standing, his two little paws grabbed Su Luo's sleeve.

"Awoo awoo—" Very painful, very painful!

"Not painful." Su Luo shook her head while smiling weakly.

"Awoo awoo—" How could it not be painful!

There was a lot of blood on the ground..... The little divine dragon's heart ached so much that he nearly cried.

Su Luo shook her head, forcing a smile.

Master had previously explained that in the extreme north, there was a type of Nine-tailed Spirit Fox, although its blood couldn't revive a dead person, its medical effect was still pretty good.

However, this type of spirit fox's natural disposition was very crafty, it never roamed about in areas where humans lived.

Moreover, their population was sparse, and their speed was quick as lighting. Even a tenth-ranked expert might not necessarily be able to catch a living Nine-tailed Spirit Fox.

And only a living Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's blood was useful, there was no medical effect from a dead one's blood.

But..... Su Luo raised her eyes to gaze at the boundless snow in the distance,

where Nangong Liuyun was still fighting with those three snow lions.

The fight there was so intense, it was even more unlikely that a crafty, cautious Nine-tailed Spirit Fox would appear.....

Su Luo shook her head and, with great difficulty, suppressed her rolling qi and blood: “There’s no Nine-tailed Spirit Fox.....We haven’t arrived at Xian’s Wood Residence.....Maybe it will be over.....”

The little divine dragon could understand human language.

These disheartened words of Su Luo’s made him increasingly anxious. His little tail swung back and forth, wishing he could immediately go somewhere to grab a Nine-tailed Spirit Fox.

Just at this moment, a very small white fox suddenly appeared before Su Luo.

In a cautious and guarded manner, it quietly approached.

Just now, Su Luo had coughed up a trail of blood, and now, this small fox had actually followed the blood trail, licking clean the bloodstains.

It even swallowed the ice and snow with the blood.

“There really is a fox, this fox is also very bold.....” Su Luo weakly sat in the snow, leaning against the carriage’s wall. She looked at this palm-sized small fox, finding joy in her sorrows.

Suddenly, Su Luo felt that this was somewhat strange.

This fox.....When it had pushed the snow aside to dig for blood to consume, that tail stuck up really high– Unexpectedly, it wasn’t one tail!

One tail, two tails, three tails.....

“Quick! It’s a Nine-tailed Spirit Fox!” Su Luo was so excited that she almost couldn’t breathe!

Chapter 1028 – Attack from the strong (4)

Was there anything more coincidental than this? Just now, she had kept saying that the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox was difficult to find. Now, a Nine-tailed Spirit Fox had just approached her?

Moreover, couldn't this Nine-tailed Spirit Fox eat other things that were better? It actually dug out the blood she had spit out to eat?

However, even though Su Luo was excited, she also hadn't lost her senses.

Those words of hers were spoken to the little divine dragon with her mind.

The two people had signed an equal contract and could communicate with each other in their minds.

The little divine dragon, having heard what was said, those two damp eyes of his were suddenly like ignited candle flames, in a flash, they shone.

“Awoo!” The little divine dragon was like a legendary giant bird spreading his wings, with speed quick as light, he suddenly attacked towards the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox!

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox was already very cautious, its perception for danger completely stemmed from instinct.

Just at this moment, the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's two small claws had clasped a lump of blood, sitting on the ground, chewing it with relish. It raised its head to see a black shadowy thing pouncing towards it.

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox immediately used that half lump of blood it was biting on as a weapon and fiercely tossed it towards the little divine dragon!

Afterwards, its palm-sized small body quickly dashed away.

How could the little divine dragon allow it to run away? He hurriedly dashed

up while shouting and waving a paw.

As a result, in this world of ice and snow.

There were two shining white small magical beasts, one in front and one behind, one running and one chasing, with speed so quick that it was astonishing.

Both of these small magical beasts' forte was speed, both were Heaven's favorite and their innate skill was superior from birth.

Momentarily, it was unexpectedly difficult to decide who was winning.

Su Luo, looking on helplessly at those two small things dashed about, for a moment, she was somewhat speechless.

At present, this wasn't good.

In this land of snow, the Dragon Scaled Horse had fainted, laying there motionless.

She was tossed out of the carriage, leaning against the carriage as she sat on the ground. She also couldn't move.

By chance, Su Luo's position allowed her to see the battle in the sky.

The two sides' battle was very intense.

Seeing those fast after images of their figure flashing by, Su Luo's eyes narrowed slightly. Her gaze was fixedly watching, not moving a bit.

Suddenly, a divine light quickly flashed through her mind.

So quick that she couldn't catch it with several steps.

But this was very important!

Extremely important!

Because seeing those figure's after images flashing by, Su Luo could faintly understand a bit of the real meaning behind teleportation.

Su Luo forced herself to recollect everything bit by bit.

However, that divine light was like throwing a stone into an ocean, sinking without a trace. She didn't get the slightest reaction.

Su Luo gloomily slapped her own head.

If she lost this opportunity, don't know when the next opportunity would be for her to understand it.

The Spirit Dance Steps' law, she had already cultivated from beginning to the end. Although her speed was a lot quicker, but it still had not reached the teleportation stage.

Just at this moment.

On the snowy vast expanse of whiteness by Su Luo's side, suddenly, an area of white snow stood upright!

A long sword drilled out ghostlike from the ground, noiselessly slicing towards Su Luo's throat!

That area of snow was not real snow at all.

Rather, it was a person.

A person that was completely white from his hair to his clothes, to his shoes and socks.

His whole body was white, on top of this area being pure white as snow, it was extremely easy to miss him.

Even Su Luo only realized it after seeing the reflective light from that cold double-edged sword!

This clearly was an assassination after some careful deliberation!

Su Luo's body had already been seriously injured, after the incident when the Dragon Scaled Horse went mad, her body was even weaker to the extreme—— Confronted with such an ice-cold double-edged sword, how could she avoid it?

At present, she couldn't even move.

Nangong Liuyun, right now, was in the midst of battling three powerful magical beasts, too occupied to attend to other things.

The little divine dragon had already left in vigorous pursuit of the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox, leaving absolutely not a trace behind.

The Variant Acacia hadn't recovered from its serious injury, the little stone

was still unconcious.

What was Su Luo to do right now?

Would she be able to avoid this calamity?

Chapter 1029 – Between life and death (1)

Nangong Liuyun was in the midst of fighting with the three Snow Lions, and they were in a deadlock.

His speed was very fast, illusory like smoke, making it hard for people to grasp his figure.

The three Snow Lions formed the Chinese character 品 to surrounded Nangong Liuyun in mid-air.

Glaring like a tiger watching its prey, their imposing manner burst out.

Nangong Liuyun coldly smiled, in a flash, he put back that double-edged sword.

Afterwards, his right hand, from the arm to the fingertips, actually gave off a faint gold color.

This arm seemed to have endless fighting strength, invincible, so valiant that it made people's heart throb.

The three Snow Lions looked at each other in dismay, a trace of astonishment flashing in their eyes.

However, their instinctive pride made them unable to retreat!

“Roar——”

Just when the light golden luster on Nangong Liuyun's right arm become increasingly more intense.

Those three Snow Lions abruptly rushed towards him!

Nangong Liuyun's golden arm slowly circulated the Law of Heaven and Earth, forming band after band of a veined pattern that changed unpredictably.

His eyes narrowed slightly, at the last second he swung that golden fist!

“Bang—”

The entire world shook.

The surrounding air momentarily ruptured!

That fist, radiating endless rays of light, dazzling to the eyes with insufferable arrogance.

That arm seemed to extend out countless folds longer in an instant, unceasingly piercing through the sky.

The Snow Lion that flew in the front, was instantly smashed by that fist!

This defense was formed by the widely known abnormally strong Snow Lion.

This Snow Lion had the hardest skull.

Yet that head was unexpectedly smashed into pieces!

In a flash, its enormous body was thrown away, it shot backwards towards a distant place, then fell to the ground with a loud ‘bang’.

A huge hole was smashed into the icy ground covered by millennium-old ice and snow. This was a horribly shocking sight to see.

Nangong Liuyun’s figure was like electricity, demon-like as it shot towards them, avoiding the attacks by the two Snow Lions.

He had eliminated the eldest, now, only the second brother and third brother remained.

And the hind leg of the third brother had previously been cut by Nangong Liuyun, so its strength had dropped by a lot.

“Bang——”

A violent fluctuation occurred in mid-air.

A Snow Lion had changed direction, his four paws stretched out, with scarlet-rimmed eyes, it rushed furiously towards Nangong Liuyun!

Meanwhile.

On a snow-capped mountain not far away, two figures stood there motionless.

“You should feel at ease, nothing will happen to Third Junior Brother.” Situ Ming saw Li Yaoyao nervously staring, unable to take her eyes off the fight, and couldn’t help but speak to comfort her.

At the same time, he also inevitably had a somewhat wrong taste in his heart.

Third Junior Brother treated her like this, and her heart staunchly only thought of him. No matter how optimistic he might be, in the end, it was still difficult for him to be at peace with this idea.

Li Yaoyao watched that battle, her eyes unblinkingly staring at it, very clearly, she was truly nervous.

“Right, what you said isn’t wrong, nothing will happen to Third Senior Brother. It’s impossible for something to happen to him!” Li Yaoyao pursed her lower lip, a thread of resoluteness flashed through her eyes.

Situ Ming turned sideways, looking at the delicate complexion beside him, he heaved a faint sigh.

“Second Senior Brother, are you regretting it?” Li Yaoyao changed her expression and pitifully gazed at Situ Ming.

Situ Ming did a favor for the eldest of the Snow Lions. When he went to find the oldest, which he had saved back then, with the keepsake, the Snow Lion had agreed to help him.

“Yaoyao, this favor originally could have been exchanged for something better, but now, it was used on this matter of sending away Third Junior Brother, is it really worth it?”

It wasn’t because Situ Ming hated to part with this favor.

After all, if it was something that could make Li Yaoyao happy, even if it required his life, he would still do it.

Only, wasn’t this not enough gain to make up for the losses? After all, having a Snow Lion owe you a favor wasn’t an easy matter.

Chapter 1030 – Between life and death (2)

Li Yaoyao pursed her lips and shook her head with unswerving determination: “No, it’s very much worth it.”

Because, if it wasn’t for the Snow Lions drawing Nangong Liuyun away, she simply would never have the opportunity to move against Su Luo, that cheap girl!

Third Senior Brother really treasured that cheap girl too much, as if Su Luo, that cheap girl, would die if he left her side.

Just as if she was tied to his waist, taking her along to wherever he goes, closely protecting her. She simply wasn’t given a chance to move against her.

“The person you found, will he really be able to kill Su Luo?” Situ Ming’s expression was somewhat complicated.

That girl’s appearance was nearly identical to Master’s most treasured wooden carving. Clearly, it could be seen there definitely was a connection between them two.

If Master knew.....

Situ Ming simply didn’t dare to imagine that kind of consequences.

If they succeeded in one strike, then fine, if they let the other side escape, it simply would cause no end of trouble.

“He came.”

Li Yaoyao was looking off in the distance, a white shadow quietly approached Su Luo and a double-edged sword ferociously thrust towards Su Luo’s throat.

“Second Senior Brother, believe in me, Su Luo undoubtedly will die this time!” Li Yaoyao’s eyes narrowed sinisterly with excitement ignited in her eyes.

With Su Luo dead, Third Senior Brother would be hers!

Li Yaoyao excitedly clenched her fists, her nails digging deeply into her flesh, but she completely paid no attention to it.

As for what was happening on Su Luo's side.

The murderous cold double-edged sword ruthlessly stabbed towards Su Luo's neck!

Just at this moment of imminent peril.

Su Luo's gaze turned towards Nangong Liuyun——

She saw Nangong Liuyun hurriedly crush the second Snow Lion to death.

She saw Nangong Liuyun turn his head back.

She saw his eyes going from stunned to despair to disbelief. She saw him recklessly rush towards her.

His speed was extremely quick.

However, the double-edged sword was already before her eyes, it was already too late.

Just at this critical moment, seeing Nangong Liuyun's speed that nearly defied the natural order of things, those after images that flashed through her head one by one.....

A divine light suddenly flashed through Su Luo's mind. Moreover, she was finally able to catch this divine light!

To step on and destroy the afterimages, must pierce through the void.....

Su Luo only felt a heat quickly rise from her pubic region transferring to her legs.

"Teleport!" Su Luo only felt that her entire body seemed to be placed in a void.

Originally, she was only separated by the paper on a window from the actual facts.

Now, the paper on the window was poked open, Su Luo felt as if it were a

lifetime ago.

Just at this moment of a fine line between life and death, she actually comprehended the true meaning of integrating the Spirit Dance Steps with space.

Teleport!

She actually learned to teleport!

Even though it was only a short ten meters' distance, this nonetheless demonstrated that she already had set foot in the doorway of this law.

Su Luo escaped like a fish in water.

That person with white clothes and white hair had believed success was within grasp, the result was that he actually came up empty.

How could he possibly accept this kind of failure?

The double-edged sword reversed directions and once again stabbed towards Su Luo's back.

Just now, Su Luo had disappeared in the blink of an eye, and in another eye blink, appeared ten meters away. The white-clothed person only thought it was because his own vision blurred and never even thought in the direction of teleportation.

After all, in this world, to reach understanding to the law of teleportation only existed in legends. In the real world, it had already been lost long ago.

Let alone to say, whose family's teleportation was only ten metres? As a result, it simply never occurred to him.

The double-edged sword was like a viper, tightly nipping at Su Luo, not letting go.

Seeing that the person was about to stab Su Luo's back again.

"Teleport!" Su Luo swallowed a Spirit Restoration Pill and, relying on the little bit of recovered spirit power, she once again left by teleport.

That white-clothed person was momentarily struck dumb.

He completely couldn't understand how this person could vanish time after

time? If it was because his vision blurred, how could his vision continuously blur twice in a row?

“I’ll stab!” The white-clothed person gritted his teeth, rushing towards Su Luo and once more ferociously stabbed at her back!

Chapter 1031 – Between life and death (3)

At the same time, he arranged an imprisonment with a range of one hundred meters, confining Su Luo's movements.

He just didn't believe that this time, he would still let Su Luo escape!

This time, the white-clothed person used one hundred percent of his strength!

This thrust had all his strength placed in it.

He opened his eyes wide, afraid that this time, his vision would blur once again.

However, he didn't know that he would never be blurry-eyed again.

Because he had already fallen down for eternity, never to wake up again.

Nangong Liuyun's berserk golden fist that emitted an endless violent energy, heavily smashed towards his back.

All of the white-clothed person's bones rapidly cracked, shattering into pieces. Until finally, he turned into a lump of minced meat, falling softly to the ground.

Up ahead, Su Luo staggered and almost fell down.

Nangong Liuyun turned around and went to her, with quick steps, he caught her and placed her tightly in his embrace.

"Luo Luo." Nangong Liuyun stared at her nervously, examining her body from head to toe.

From the moment he saw that long sword thrust towards Su Luo until now, Nangong Liuyun's figure still trembled slightly.

"Damn it!" With this examination, Nangong Liuyun got so angry that he nearly

went crazy.

His precious Luoluo—these days, he had carefully attended to her with all of his heart. And with great difficulty, he had finally gotten a little healthy color from Luo Luo. Now, her body's internal organs and veins were in disorder, even more, the lapel of her coat was mottled with bloodstains.

Falling into his embrace, Su Luo opened her pair of weak eyes. The corners of her mouth slowly formed a gorgeous smile: “Nangong, I just knew you would rush over.”

Nangong Liuyun's pair of icy, gloomy, cold and bloodthirsty eyes. At the corners of his eyes, he restrained them slightly but it was full of self-blame.

“Luo Luo... I almost—I almost lost you again...”

He had vowed before that he would never let her get hurt again; he had vowed to protect her well. But now, she was hurt right in front of his eyes.

A breeze caressed his jet-black as ink hair. That beautiful and exquisite appearance was full of heartache and guilt.

Su Luo smiled weakly: “Don't blame yourself, it's not your fault.”

“No, it's my fault!” Nangong Liuyun said, “The Snow Lion would never attack us without cause or reason. The reason for this is well worth thinking over!”

Nangong Liuyun's gaze turned to that white-clothed person's badly mutilated body. His pitch-black, ink-like eyes emitted a faint, hidden light with a strange measuring look.

No one knew what Nangong Liuyun was thinking.

“The wounds on your body...” The bright red blood on the front of Su Luo's body deeply stung his pair of eyes.

Nangong Liuyun's pair of eyes narrowed slightly, springing up with a ruthlessness.

“The little divine dragon left to hunt down the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox. Hopefully he can capture it.” Su Luo weakly rested her head against his chest. Rubbing against it for a moment, searching for a comfortable position to lean against.

Earlier, when she was avoiding the white-clothed person, she used teleport twice in a row, almost exhausting all of her strength.

At this time, she always felt as if oxygen was being extracted out from her brain, leaving a blank sheet. Moreover, she felt so nauseated that she wanted to vomit.

Seeing Su Luo's pale appearance, Nangong Liuyun once again hated that he wasn't an Apothecary.

"We'll go look for the little divine dragon." He had never been the kind of person to sit and wait for death or to entrust to chance rather than show initiative. His policy was always to take the initiative to attack.

With a quick turn of his agile body, Nangong Liuyun got up and slapped awake the Dragon Scaled Horse. Very quickly, they were far away from this bloodstained, snow covered ground.

"Were all three beasts killed?" Su Luo, who had suffered excessive blood loss, kept feeling like her whole body was cold and was unable to stop shivering.

"I killed two." Nangong Liuyun's appearance was cold and stiff, and his gaze was extremely cold like iron. However, when he spoke to Su Luo, his gaze was so tender and warm that water could drip out.

"Releasing the tiger back into the mountains will cause no end of trouble." Su Luo's tone carried regret, that didn't disperse for a long time.

The Snow Lion species' race, because it had low numbers, so they were very united. Moreover, they liked to hold grudges; they would certainly seek revenge.

Chapter 1032 – Between life and death (4)

If all three of them were killed together, then it would be fine, but Nangong Liuyun just so happened to let one go.

Su Luo knew—considering Nangong Liuyun’s strength, knowledge and experience, how could he have let one go?

It was because he had seen her in danger that he had abandoned the third Snow Lion and turned around to save her.

Nangong Liuyun sent an endless stream of spirit strength from his palm to Su Luo’s chest cavity.

Originally, after soaking in Grandmaster Rong Yun’s medicinal bath for seven days, Su Luo’s body had already gotten a little better and no longer needed to have spirit strength injected into her everyday.

However, after going through this battle, Su Luo’s body returned to the state it was before her liberation from the bath. In a single night, beaten back to its previous state.

At this moment, a lustrous radiance circulated between the two figures, as spiritual energy flowed all over the place.

Yet, speaking of that snowy mountain peak...

Li Yaoyao watched everything unfold before her eyes with a dumbstruck expression. It was simply too hard to believe.

She stared until Situ Ming once again called her name.

“Yaoyao, Yaoyao——”

At this time, Li Yaoyao had already bitten her lip until a trace of blood appeared.

“Why is it like this...?” Li Yaoyao’s figure trembled slightly, almost on the verge of collapse.

Her voice was very soft, as if asking a question, but also seemed as if she was muttering to herself.

At this moment, she was engrossed in her own world. Confused and in disbelief, no matter what, she couldn’t walk out of it.

Situ Ming’s heart ached as he watched the Li Yaoyao before him, unsure how to comfort her.

“Why? Why didn’t she die? Why?!” Li Yaoyao frantically shook Situ Ming’s arms with great strength in her grip, nearly pinching into Situ Ming’s flesh.

“Little Junior Sister, calm down, calm down!” Situ Ming stroked Li Yaoyao’s hair, consoling her in a soft tone, “The matter is already like this, you should just accept the reality.”

The fact that Su Luo wasn’t killed allowed Situ Ming to let out a breath of relief inwardly.

Because, when he saw Su Luo, he would always think of his master’s secretive, measuring and mysterious eyes.

Every time he thought of Master, his heart couldn’t help but to hold Master in high esteem and to revere him.

“Second Senior Brother! I’m unwilling to accept this! I’m really unwilling to accept this!” Li Yaoyao’s pair of eyes was scarlet red, deranged like a lunatic.

“Yaoyao, how can your...” appearance become like this now?

The second half of his sentence—Situ Ming’s mouth opened slightly, but couldn’t say a word. He was afraid he would hurt Li Yaoyao.

“Second Senior Brother, help me! Help me one more time, okay?” Li Yaoyao continuously beseeched him, both of her eyes were full of appeal, hope and expectation.

But Situ Ming slowly turned his face away.

“Second Senior Brother, even you don’t like me anymore? Boo hoo——” Li

Yaoyao pulled out her final trump card. Crying with the tear-stained face of a beauty, she looked very pitiful.

How could Situ Ming endure the pleas and tears of his goddess?

His stroked Li Yaoyao's soft hair and finally made a firm resolution: "Don't cry anymore. Second Senior Brother promises you, okay."

Situ Ming suddenly thought of his master's pair of deep, pitch-black eyes.

However, he deliberately ignored it.

What could be more important than Little Junior Sister's smiling face?

"Second Senior Brother treats me the best!" Li Yaoyao sniffled as she got rid of her tears and smiled. She pulled on Situ Ming's arm intimately, acting like a spoiled child as she rubbed against him, "With Second Senior Brother by Yaoyao's side, then Yaoyao won't be afraid of anything."

Looking at this childish girl before him, Situ Ming laughed bitterly again and again. If he was really this great, then why didn't this girl choose him instead?

At this time, Situ Ming, who was gazing at Li Yaoyao with deep emotions—the hand at his side clenched tightly into a fist.

Everything he did was by following his heart. It shouldn't be... wrong, right?

However, Situ Ming had never expected how the person he gave everything to love, cherish and protect, would ultimately treat him in the not-too-distant future.

Chapter 1033 – Between life and death (5)

Su Luo's breathing was getting weaker and weaker in his arms.

Nangong Liuyun poured out a few Vitality Pills and crushed them into fine powder. With some water, he gave it to Su Luo to swallow.

Su Luo nodded weakly: "I'm still okay..."

"What do you mean you're okay? You're already like this." Nangong Liuyun stared at Su Luo with self-blame and pain as he spoke in a bad mood.

Su Luo's palm-sized small face creased: "It's bitter..."

Every other aspect of the Vitality Pills Master refined was good, it's just that it was bitter.

Nangong Liuyun didn't say anything more, in one mouthful, he finished the water in the cup and then his body bent over hers. .

Su Luo was compelled to accept his mouth-to-mouth feeding.

"Is it still bitter like this?" Nangong Liuyun's sharp eyebrows slanted upwards.

Su Luo's small face wrinkled and shook her head cutely.

Right at this moment, Su Luo's crystal-like eyes suddenly lit up.

"The little divine dragon is coming."

She and the little divine dragon had agreed to and signed a contract of equality. Just now, in her mind, she could hear the little divine dragon's cheer of victory.

Not long after, the little divine dragon leaped into the carriage in a bouncing and vivacious manner.

At this time, he was holding a furry, snow-white little thing in his mouth.

“Nine-tailed Spirit Fox?” Nangong Liuyun was slightly moved.

Things that Grandmaster Rong Yun had asked him to look out for, he had kept in mind. .

From start to finish, on this journey, he had always been paying attention to the sides of the road, but there wasn't even a trace of a footprint.

He had never thought that this little dragon would be this amazing, directly bringing back the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox in his mouth.

“Awoo, awoo——” It was pretending to be dead, I just knocked it out.

The little divine dragon jumped into Su Luo's arms with his little tail raised up high, looking immensely proud of himself, taking credit for his achievement. His whole appearance was like that of a lively brat.

Su Luo smiled as she gently caressed the little divine dragon's slightly messy fur.:“Definitely worthy of being called the dragon race's most noble bloodline—really amazing.”

The little divine dragon heard this praise and became even more excited.

He proudly stuffed his prey, the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox, into Su Luo's hand.

As expected, the little divine dragon had some intelligence.

The most precious aspect about the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's was its blood. Right now, it was only knocked out without a single cut on its body.

Nangong Liuyun took out his dagger and aimed it at the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's neck and was about to slice down.

Although the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox was precious, but compared to his darling Luo Luo's body, then it's nothing at all.

Just at this moment, the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox suddenly regained consciousness.

However, when the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox opened its eyes and looked towards Nangong Liuyun, it could not help but shake slightly, subconsciously, it curled up in fear.

‘What a powerful human!’

The person before its eyes, under a seemingly tranquil and fluid glance, hid a sharp edge like a hawk's. He had the unsurpassed oppressive powers of a strong expert, which astonished the hearts of others.

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's eyes, which were originally glancing about randomly, drooped down in a flash. Its body rolled up into a ball, similar to a hedgehog.

When Nangong Liuyun lifted it by the ear, it was still curled up into a round ball. Nangong Liuyun simply couldn't find its neck.

Nangong Liuyun's thick eyebrows knitted slightly, then, he immediately flipped it over and lifted up the little spirit fox by its two little feet.

Consequently, the pitiful Nine-tailed Spirit Fox was forced to hang upside down and swing back and forth miserably in Nangong Liuyun's hand.

Its pair of black limpid eyes looked towards Su Luo miserably, wanting to sob, looking extremely aggrieved.

Just at this moment, Su Luo's suddenly eyes lit up.

"Hold on——"

"Uhm?" Nangong Liuyun looked back at her warmly, "What is it?"

Su Luo was in extremely high spirits. As she pulled at Nangong Liuyun's hand, her eyes were full of brilliance like the tossing of waves: "I have a way."

"Say it." Nangong Liuyun helped her sit up. His eyes gathered a splendor akin to bright stones. With a warm smile, he single-mindedly concentrated on gazing at her.

As if there was only her alone in the world.

In his eyes, there was only her.

Su Luo, full of spirit, said: "The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox is extremely rare. To kill one, there's one less. Moreover, if you kill it now, you can only use it once."

Chapter 1034 – Between life and death (6)

“En, however, it’s only this big.” Nangong Liuyun gestured at the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox’s size, “Doesn’t seem to have much blood.”

Moreover, the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox’s most precious thing was its heart’s blood. That’s a rarely seen, once in a millennium, wonderful medicine.

“What if we feed it a Vitality Pill?” Su Luo’s beautiful eyes turned quick-wittedly, flashing with a crafty radiance.

“No, you don’t have a lot of Vitality Pills left!” When it involved the topic of Su Luo’s health, Nangong Liuyun, as usual, held fast to his principle and did not budge an inch.

“Aiya. Feed it a Vitality Pill, then I’ll drink its blood. Isn’t that fine?” Su Luo nearly rolled her eyes.

Nangong Liuyun leaned back in the carriage, with his beautiful, lily-white hands grasping the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox which had fainted.

With a single thought, he could decide the life or death of this little spirit fox which had already survived for several hundred years.

“Let’s try it first.” Nangong Liuyun’s eyes shone and dazzled like crystal stones, flashing with rays of light.

If it was truly like Su Luo said, then it could still be considered as a good method.

There wouldn’t be much of a loss in treating this Nine-tailed Spirit Fox as a medicine pot.

Su Luo placated the little pitiful one, “If you take this medicine you can still live. If you don’t take it, then all that’s left for you is death.”

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox was extremely intelligent. It hadn't signed a contract with Su Luo, but it still understood human speech.

The Vitality Pills distributed a spiritual strength that was full of strength. The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox liked it instinctively.

So, it didn't wait to be fed and rushed forward on its own towards Su Luo's hand, immediately swallowing that pea-sized pill.

The Vitality Pill, as the name implied, had a function of improving one's physiology.

A Grandmaster level Vitality Pill was consumed.

The originally wobbly Nine-tailed Spirit Fox, in an instant, seemed to have been injected with chicken blood. Its eyes were suddenly flooded with brilliant lights and vibrant colors, giving off spirit energy from head to toe.

Nangong Liuyun's eyes flickered.

Seems like it was really useful.

He didn't say anything further and grabbed the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's little paw, cutting down with a single slice.

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox cowered and trembled with fear as it watched this incomparably formidable human, not daring to have even a thought of resisting.

After letting out a tiny cup of the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's blood, Nangong Liuyun then cast the fox aside and held the cup towards Su Luo.

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox which was tossed aside, looked at its ugly wound and wanted to sob.

The little divine dragon walked close to it and then licked the wound a few times. Very quickly, the wound stopped bleeding.

Which part of the little divine dragon's body wasn't a treasure? Even his saliva was a treasure.

Placed on the market, this saliva was the best panacea for injury.

"Watch it. Don't let it escape." Nangong Liuyun instructed the little divine dragon without even looking back.

The little divine dragon was disdainful of anyone and always had a proud and arrogant appearance. However, towards Nangong Liuyun, he had a kind of reverence that rose from deep within his heart.

As a result, he had always listened to Nangong Liuyun's words as if it was an imperial edict.

Consequently, the little divine dragon was like a prison guard watching the convict in a prison. Biting its tail, circling around that pitiful Nine-tailed Spirit Fox.

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox wanted to cry but had no tears.

Wasn't it just being a bit gluttonous? Didn't it just consume one thing? How did it end up becoming someone else's blood bank?

Boo hoo, boo hoo...

After Su Luo drank the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's blood, she felt a warm yet cool feeling in her abdomen.

The blood which had been rolling over and over from before—seemed to be choked off and gradually calmed down.

In the end, she leaned against Nangong Liuyun's chest and fell into a deep sleep.

Time passed, bit by bit.

The sky darkened and then brightened again.

The speed of the Dragon Scaled Horse was very fast, letting go of all four hooves. It was as if they were cutting out a white ray of light in mid-air, with speed as fast as a meteor.

However, just when the color of the sky started to brightened, Nangong Liuyun's eyebrows knitted slightly.

Chapter 1035 – Between life and death (7)

Su Luo opened her eyes.

What she saw was Nangong Liuyun's black eyes that shone with a spirited, cold and dazzling light.

His face seemed have been carved with a knife, extraordinarily handsome. His elegant, satin-like, fine black hair also swayed in a carefree manner in the wind over his shoulder. He was very beautiful, so beautiful that it enticed the hearts of people.

For a moment, Su Luo felt like she was bewitched, stupefied by his beauty.

“How is it? Do you feel a little more comfortable?” Nangong Liuyun's dark red vermilion lips curled up, and his deep, beautiful eyes looked at Su Luo with deep concern.

Su Luo took a deep breath.

Previously, her lungs were so unbearably hot that it hurt, to the extent that even inhaling a mouthful of air nearly made her pass out from the pain.

However, now, Su Luo took a deep breath and sucked in a mouthful of sweet scented air.

“Much better than before. It doesn't hurt as much as before.” Su Luo's face, which was originally as pale as paper, now seemed to have a faint rosiness.

Nangong Liuyun didn't feel at ease and grabbed her slender hand to take her pulse carefully. He also used his spirit energy to sort out her body thoroughly. It was only after he made sure that there weren't any major problems did his manner relax somewhat.

Su Luo continuously looked at him warmly.

This time, she injured her body seriously, but Nangong Liuyun was injured in the heart.

She had turned a demonically enchanting, cruel, untamed, powerful, aggressive, most honored and kingly person into a docile man who helps her dress, feeds her, washes her hands, and cooks soup for her.

Of course, he was docile only towards her.

“What are you laughing at? With that foolish expression all over your face.” Nangong Liuyun helped Su Luo tidy up her sleeves. Then he raised his eyes to see this girl smiling foolishly and hooked her nose lovingly.

The more Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun, the more satisfied she became. Able to pick up such a good man, really was a meat pie falling from the sky. One could only come across such things serendipitously.

It seemed that heaven still cared for her a lot.

“Nangong, after we return, lets get...” Before the word married could emerge and Su Luo still had a smile at the corners of her mouth.

However, an unforeseen event suddenly occurred at this moment.

From far away, a fierce yell could be heard faintly.

The yell was fierce as if heaven and earth was shaking, while the earth cracked and broke open.

Su Luo’s expression froze slightly. “This is...”

“The Snow Lion that escaped.” Nangong Liuyun’s expression was somewhat unsightly.

At that time, Nangong Liuyun urgently had to save Su Luo, so gave it an opportunity to escape.

Never expected that after being injured it actually stayed here and hadn’t return to its community.

“Opportunity only knocks once! Hurry up and go!” Su Luo hurriedly urged him.

She knew how the Snow Lion’s ethnic group would definitely avenge a hatred.

If this Snow Lion was beheaded here, then the follow-up danger would be eliminated. So they wouldn't need to constantly worry that the Snow Lion community would attack them.

“Hay——” Nangong Liuyun commanded the Dragon Scaled Horse to accelerate its speed.

“In fact, if you flew over there...” Su Luo had only spoken half a sentence before she was interrupted.

“Luo Luo, I can't possibly leave you by yourself.” The fear from nearly losing her before was still vivid in his mind. Just recalling it made him tremble from head to toe.

How could he still possibly leave Luoluo behind by herself? Even though if it was only one in ten thousandth of a possibility, Nangong Liuyun wouldn't take this risk.

“It's all my fault for burdening you...” Su Luo pursed her pale lips, her little head hanging down in self-blame.

Now the sickly her was just a burden.

Nangong Liuyun really loved this pitiful little appearance of Su Luo's to death. Su Luo's this kind of appearance gave him a sense of security of being able to lovingly spoil her.

“Foolish girl, do you want me die from self-blame?” Nangong Liuyun tenderly stroked her satin-like, supple hair.

Su Luo leaned against his shoulder, a smile spread across her face.

Sour and sweet feelings interweaved in her heart, gradually forming into a jar of blissful wine.

Chapter 1036 – Between life and death (8)

The Dragon Scaled Horse's speed was very fast.

In the blink of an eye, they had reached the location of the sound.

“Stay in the carriage. You're not allowed to get out.” Nangong Liuyun repeatedly instructed her.

After he finished making it clear to Su Luo, he slapped the Dragon Scaled Horse's head heavily.

Previously, because of the foolish thing the Dragon Scaled Horse had done, Nangong Liuyun had already punished it ruthlessly.

At this moment, seeing Nangong Liuyun's gaze slanting towards it, the Dragon Scaled Horse lowered its head in shame.

“Humph!” Nangong Liuyun scoffed loudly, then, moving quickly, he left.

Just as Su Luo had said, the task of eliminating the third Snow Lion was his unshirkable duty.

However, when Nangong Liuyun came out of the carriage and saw the scene before his eyes, he still paused a bit.

There were two human figures up ahead engaged in a battle with the Snow Lion.

These two people—Nangong Liuyun was very familiar with them.

A single fist from Nangong Liuyun could blast the Snow Lion into dregs. However, to many other people, the Snow Lion's power was still very hard for them to hold off.

At this moment, the two people who were battling against the Snow Lion together—one was Beichen Ying, while the other actually was Zi Yan.

Although Beichen Ying and Zi Yan's strengths weren't bad, but despite joining together to fight an injured Snow Lion, they were still at a disadvantage.

At present, they were surrounded by perils and in serious crisis.

Currently, the Snow Lion had already gone crazy, appearing very violent.

That sharp teeth gave off an extremely cold light, suddenly, the Snow Lion pounced towards Zi Yan!

Beichen Ying bellowed, an endless fiery blaze attacked the Snow Lion.

The Snow Lion abandoned Zi Yan and turned around to pounce towards Beichen Ying instead!

It flew, pouncing down from above with its bloody mouth wide open. That appearance was sinister and terrifying!

Currently, Beichen Ying and Zi Yan both had wounds all over their bodies, with fresh blood splashing bit by bit onto the ground.

After fighting for so long, they had already reached the verge of exhaustion.

Although the Snow Lion's body seemed cumbersome, but its speed was actually as fast as light. In the blink of an eye, it pounced on Beichen Ying and toppled him onto the ground.

Its sharp hunting teeth suddenly stabbed towards Beichen Ying's throat!

"No!!!" Zi Yan screamed urgently and did her utmost to rush up.

However, how could Zi Yan's speed beat the Snow Lion's speed?

She could only watch as Beichen Ying was about to lose his life to this mad Snow Lion's hunting teeth.

Just at this moment of imminent peril, Nangong Liuyun's figure descended like a god.

One could see him dressed in an ink black wide gown with his fine black hair casually tied up with a red silk string. His cruel, untamed and violent appearance was also pretty, flirtatious and moving.

A gentle wind blew across, and the tassels at his waist was windborne and danced willfully. The hem of his luxurious, soft gown, was like a warm cloud, a

flowing light that held back the shadows.

“Second Brother!” Beichen Ying, who had been toppled to the ground by the Snow Lion, suddenly, his eyes lit up!

Just at this moment, an ink black longsword emerged from Nangong Liuyun’s hands.

The longsword was like a deep, clear spring, pure white like snow.

“Slash——”

The longsword that had condensed an endless amount of spirit power, suddenly slashed heavily across the Snow Lion’s back!

To the Snow Lion that was known for its strong defense, its hard backbone was struck and broke in a flash, emitting a burst of snapping sounds.

The Snow Lion turned back, raising its head painfully to glare at Nangong Liuyun with anger and hatred interweaving in its eyes!

However, without waiting for it to jump up to attack, Nangong Liuyun turned to ruthlessly chop off the Snow Lion’s forelegs!

Even with Beichen Ying and Zi Yan joined together, they still were tyrannized terribly by the Snow Lion. However, the moment Nangong Liuyun arrived, the situation was completely overturned.

“Crash——” The Snow Lion’s foreleg was chopped off, and fresh blood gushed out.

The Snow Lion only had four legs, but one foreleg and one hind leg had been destroyed by Nangong Liuyun.

Now, the Snow Lion couldn’t even stand on its feet.

Astonishment sprouted in its heart. It turned around, wanting to run away.

Chapter 1037 – Everyone assembled (1)

The Snow Lion turned around and was about to run. Its survival instinct made its speed soar to the peak.

The Snow Lion really wanted to run, but how could Nangong Liuyun give it such an opportunity?

This Snow Lion almost killed his treasured Luo Luo, almost killed his brother, how could Nangong Liuyun let him leave?

Nangong Liuyun lifted up the black sword in his hand, it heated up like sunshine, and the sword body slashed by with a brilliant radiance.

Right now, his eyes were half-narrowed dangerously, his appearance was grave and stern, as if shrouded in frost.

The black sword contained the strength of heaven and earth, suddenly, it attacked towards the Snow Lion that had escaped to several hundred meters' distance!

The Snow Lion basically thought that it had escaped to a safe range, but then it felt a burst of murderous aura attack towards it.

It wanted to dodge but it would never had the chance.

“Slash——”

A huge noise passed by, the Snow Lion's enormous body turned and stopped momentarily.

The huge black sword disintegrated into specks of cold light, all of it entered the Snow Lion's body.

It was actually at the peak of ninth rank, but how could it withstand Nangong Liuyun's full strength attack?

Its enormous body paused a bit in mid-air, soon after, with a 'thump' sound, it fell to the ground. It smashed a huge hole in the snow-covered ground.

Beichen Ying watched everything with a dumbfounded expression....

Beichen Ying rubbed his eyes in disbelief, then rubbed it again.

Soon after, he burst out with an excited yell.

“Tell! Second Brother, what what kind of precious elixir made from heavenly material did you eat? How did you advance so quickly?!” Beichen Ying exaggeratedly jumped up.

This was only two years that they hadn't seen each other ah!

At that time, wasn't Second Brother at the eighth rank? That was already in defiance of the natural order, but just now, the ninth-ranked Snow Lion that he and Zi Yan together couldn't beat, had fallen with just one strike from Second Brother.

This....

“Hey boss, could it be you are at the peak of ninth rank?” Beichen Ying weakly asked.

That pair of thick eyelashes brushed over a pair of clear monochrome eyes, blinking as it watched Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun stood there with hands behind his back, and lifted his chin in an extremely showy fashion: “Ninth rank? I haven't been one for a long time.”

“Ahhh ,ahhh, ahhh!!!” Beichen Ying jumped around in chaos from being stimulated!

He was really stimulated okay?

These two years, in order to increase his strength, he went into the Magical Beast Forest by himself to cultivate through experience. Like going through wind and fire, countless times being surrounded by danger, countless times on the brink of life or death.

However, even like this, these two years, he only got promoted to eighth rank ah!

But Second Brother, actually wordlessly advanced to the tenth rank ah, tenth rank!

What goddamned kind of speed was this? How could it let others live?

After our little noble Beichen's excitement passed, he withered like an eggplant during first frost of winter.

Zi Yan hit Beichen Ying on the head: "Little Shadow, you are not so bad yourself, you can pass muster against most people."

Zi Yan herself, even now, was still at the seventh rank.

Bringing this up, Beichen Ying's eyes suddenly lit up: "Uhm, where is Sister-in-law? "

Mentioning Luo Luo, a tenderness flashed through Nangong Liuyun's ice-cold eyes.

"Take its crystal nucleus."

With free labor present, not using it would be a waste.

Nangong Liuyun confidently and at ease fluttered his sleeves, walked away smooth as a cloud.

At this time, Su Luo had already walked out of the carriage, standing in place, both eyes containing a smile as she smilingly gazed at Nangong Liuyun.

"Why did you come out?" Nangong Liuyun stretched out his long arms and looped her into his embrace.

Su Luo placed her body weight on his body, only like this was she barely able to stand steadily.

"Seeing you guys fighting, it was so lively, so I came out to see." Su Luo raised her pale little face, that little face was overflowing with smiles.

"Luo Luo!" Zi Yan excitedly rushed up, throwing herself over, wanting to hug Su Luo.

Chapter 1038 – Everyone assembled (2)

However, before her could come within ten meter range of Su Luo, her body was ruthlessly ejected out.

“Third Senior Brother!” Zi Yan, panting in rage, glared at Nangong Liuyun.

Beichen Ying followed close behind to throw himself towards Su Luo.

However, it was the same result, he was also ejected out by that circle of light.

Moreover, this time, Nangong Liuyun was even more ruthless. He used an even heavier hand than before, directly dropping Beichen Ying down and giving him a black eye.

“Second Brother, you are really heartless!” Beichen Ying staunchly crawled up, complaining about being wronged.

Isn't it just hugging Su Luo, he was actually so stingy.

“Eh.” Seeing Su Luo, Zi Yan suddenly stared blankly in place, she didn't speak for a very long time.

Beichen Ying looked at Su Luo at the same time, and his body froze from being startled. His eyes contracted momentarily.

“Luo Luo, how did you...” Zi Yan only felt that her throat was choked with emotions and couldn't say another word.

“Wasn't careful and received a small injury...no harm...” Su Luo gracefully smiled.

Only, she couldn't even stand up, with a pale face that was paper white. Her complexion was so sickly that it was too pitiful to behold.

Her being like this, other people could see that she was heavily injured at a

glance.

Beichen Ying's face flashed with faint anger, nearly about to explode. He clenched his fist tighter: "Second Brother, how did this come about?"

Nangong Liuyun's face seemed to be shrouded in cold frost. He was silent without speaking, he carried Su Luo and turned around to climb into the carriage.

"Let's get into the carriage." Su Luo smilingly waved them over.

The four of them climbed into the carriage. The Dragon Scaled Horse let go of all four hoofs to gallop toward the already established direction.

In the carriage the four people looked at each other, finally it was still Su Luo who took the lead to break the silence.

She smiled, saying in a placating tone. "You guys shouldn't have this expression of the sky is about to collapse, I haven't died yet...."

"Be quiet!" Nangong Liuyun roared angrily toward Su Luo. "You are not allowed to say this word!"

His voice was very loud, the Dragon Scaled Horse originally was running well, but with his shout, its four hoofs nearly lie down on the ground.

Beichen Ying and Zi Yan also couldn't help but shivered a little from fear.

In their eyes, even though Nangong Liuyun was conceited and insufferably arrogant, but he always cultivated a nobility that came from within his body.

In their impressions, the angrier Nangong Liuyun was the more cruel his methods. The smile on his face would become increasingly more alluring and demonically charming. His voice would be low and soft.

Such a savage roar, was rarely seen.

However Nangong Liuyun maybe fierce but Su Luo wasn't afraid of him.

Compared to the two people with their head hanging low not daring to look face to face with Nangong Liuyun, Su Luo seemed even more unperturbed.

She held Nangong Liuyun's hand and softly said. "Okay, I won't say this word from now on, don't get angry."

Nangong Liuyun gazed at her deeply, in the end he sighed, with one hand he press her to his chest.

“Luo Luo, I’m afraid...”

Nangong Liuyun who was cruel, untamed, aggressive, overbearing and insufferably arrogant, there was also a time when he was afraid.

Beichen Ying and Zi Yan looked at each other in dismay, shock flickered within their eyes.

Really, really, didn’t expect, on this feelings of affection between two people, Nangong Liuyun would sink in so deeply, so heavily.

This strong affection, nearly burned and injured them that were merely spectators, let alone to say how it affected Su Luo.

Beichen Ying watched the figures that were inseparably in love and nestled against each other, the corner of his mouth lifted up into a self mocking bitter smile.

His family’s fearless second brother, with such deep emotional attachment. What.... could he still do?

Some things that were buried deep in the heart, after a long time perhaps he would forget about it...

However Beichen Ying also knows that this notion was merely to deceive himself.

All around was quiet.

After a long time, Su Luo then broke this oppressive atmosphere....

Chapter 1039 – Everyone assembled (3)

“It’s fine, no need for such a bitter face, it’s ominous.” Su Luo quietly said with a smile.

“Your injuries...” Zi Yan looked at Su Luo with a tangled expression, “In the end, how did it come about?”

She remembered at that time, Third Senior Brother had already found Su Luo, the two of them clearly left together.

With Third Senior Brother by her side protecting her, how could he allow Luo Luo to get injured?

Thinking up to here, Zi Yan glared at Third Senior Brother whom she very much admired with condemnation in her eyes.

Third Senior Brother was so strong, why couldn’t he have protected Luo Luo well?

Having received Zi Yan’s condemning glare, Nangong Liuyun’s expression didn’t change, but the guilt and self-blame deep in his heart started to fill the air.

Su Luo held his hand, she could feel the change in his mood.

“It was the old witch Yan Xia that injured me.” Su Luo explained to them.

“Old witch Yan Xia?!” Zi Yan almost jumped up, “That witch hasn’t died yet?”

If it was the old witch Yan Xia, then no wonder Third Senior Brother couldn’t do much.

“No, now she is already dead.” Su Luo smiled then added a sentence, “Nangong Liuyun killed her.”

As soon as the words were said, everyone immediately became quiet.

Beichen Ying's eyes widened until it was perfectly round.

Zi Yan's mouth was open wide.

Both of them looked at Nangong Liuyun in shock, unable to take their gazes away from him.

This, this news was simply too terrifying!

It was scarier than the news about him being a tenth-ranked expert.

Old witch Yan Xia was well-known for being exceptionally strong from the older generation, her existence was close to defying nature. She was a character that could escape alive from being besieged by the heads of the ten great powers, she was actually killed by Nangong?

"This... is too damn shocking!" Beichen Ying finally found his voice, although he sounded a bit shaky.

Su Luo exchanged a gentle glance with Nangong Liuyun, then smilingly said to Beichen Ying: "This matter, placed on Nangong's body, isn't strange at all."

Nangong Liuyun, these four characters, represented an existence that defied natural order.

No matter what he did, everything was possible.

"Also right..." Beichen Ying's voice quieted down.

Su Luo's gaze when looking at Nangong Liuyun was full of tenderness, even a blind person could see her feelings for him.

Two years before, Second Brother had forcefully pinned her by his side, and she was like a bird in a cage, yearning for freedom.

But two years later, she was perfectly happy to stay by his side with syrupy sweet feelings.

He clenched the fists by his side a few times, Beichen Ying's lips slowly curling up into a genuine smile.

Seeing her happy, his heart felt assured.

Nangong Liuyun thoughtfully glanced at Beichen Ying, his gaze was deep, pitch-black like ink and unfathomable.

Zi Yan, this child, was insensitive and careless, and completely was unaware that the mood was a bit strange.

All of her attention was focused on Su Luo's injuries.

"Isn't your master Grandmaster Rong Yun? Could it be that even he can't heal your injuries?"

Su Luo's complexion really was not very good.

She couldn't feel the spirit force on Su Luo's body at all.

Zi Yan was really very worried.

Su Luo smiled bitterly and shook her head: "This time's injuries are comparably problematic, even Master was helpless. In the end, since nothing could be done, so we chose to challenge Xian's Wood Residence."

"Xian's Wood Residence is being opened ten years ahead of time, actually is because of you..." Zi Yan's eyes momentarily opened wide.

"Could it be that you both don't know?" Su Luo curiously asked.

"I don't know." Zi Yan shooked her head uncertainly, "My Master didn't tell me."

"My dad also didn't say." Beichen Ying shook his head as well.

"It's no wonder..." Su Luo lowered her voice and said in sudden realization.

"No wonder what?" Nangong Liuyun asked in a puzzled tone.

Chapter 1040 – Everyone assembled (4)

“No wonder Li Yaoyao didn’t say that she wouldn’t go to Xian’s Wood Residence.” Su Luo laughed faintly, “If she knew that this time, going to Xian’s Wood Residence was to find the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort for me, she probably wouldn’t even lift her head before leaving.”

“It doesn’t matter even if she left.” Nangong Liuyun said with a ghost of a smile.

“Why?” Su Luo and the other two curiously asked.

Nangong Liuyun smiled mysteriously, but did not say anything revealing.

“That’s right, how did you guys end up battling the Snow Lion?”

Mentioning this, Zi Yan got really gloomy, she said in a tangled manner: “Don’t know which bastard injured the Snow Lion, the result being that we were walking along the road minding our business, and suddenly, it attacked us! Hmph, if I were to find out which bastard implicated us in his trouble, see if I wouldn’t skin him alive!”

The more Zi Yan talked, the angrier she got, with her eyes wide open in a glare. This time, they simply met this disaster by chance, it had nothing to do with them!

Su Luo looked at her, then she looked at Nangong Liuyun who was frowning, and with a ‘pfft’ sound, she laughed out loud.

Benchen Ying unhappily hit Zi Yan: “The opponent could hurt the Snow Lion, clearly, he was very strong, you think you can beat him?”

With this short sentence, immediately Zi Yan was choked off ruthlessly.

Zi Yan stared back with an imposing manner: “I’m no match, but our sect has Third Senior Brother! Third Senior Brother, you will help avenge me, right?”

The last part of the sentence, Zi Yan said in a flattering manner, with her face lifted towards Nangong Liuyun.

Su Luo originally didn't want to stimulate Zi Yan, but finally, she still couldn't stand by and idly watch. She smilingly told the actual facts: "Do you think your Third Senior Brother would skin himself?"

"How is this possible..." Having said the sentence halfway through, Zi Yan's expression suddenly froze, as if her throat was being pinched by someone. No matter what, she couldn't finish the later half of the sentence.

"Third, Third, Third Senior Brother... that Snow Lion was you, you, you..."

Look at our Miss Zi Yan being scared to such a degree.

Nangong Liuyun's gaze was clear and biting, his deeply cold phoenix eyes were narrowed halfway, he looked at Zi Yan with a strange evilness in his eyes, and lifted up an eyebrow with a smirk.

"Ah... Ha ha ha, this is such a coincidence! If it weren't for me and Little Shadow passing by and stopping this wounded Snow Lion. If it had escaped back to its community to complain, then it would have been difficult to deal with later!"

You couldn't say that Zi Yan's reaction wasn't fast.

She forced out two shallow laughs, directly reversed her stance and portrayed herself as a minister having done an outstanding service.

But what she said wasn't wrong, if they had let the Snow Lion run back to its community, this would have become a big problem.

Nangong Liuyun gazed at her indifferently, a trace of sinisterness came through his eyes, and he said faintly: "Such a good plan was all ruined by you guys."

"Oh?" Zi Yan was suddenly confused.

She looked at her little companion: "Little Shadow, what does Third Senior Brother mean?"

Why was it that she couldn't understand it?

Beichen Ying thoughtfully glanced at Nangong Liuyun, and asked: “Let the tiger return to the mountains, could it be...like the mantis stalking the cicada, unaware of the danger behind it?”

“Not so stupid after all.” Nangong Liuyun’s voice was as cold as the ice in a deep pool, piercing through the bones. He heavily snorted. “If you let the people escape, then both of you guys should slit your throats in apology.”

Zi Yan became even more confused, with a perplexed expression painted over her entire face. She stealthily pulled at Beichen Ying’s sleeve: “I know every word Third Senior Brother said, but put it together, I really can’t understand their meaning.”

Beichen Yin smiled bitterly and shook his head: “Keep quiet, we nearly messed up something huge.”

Just now having considered herself a minister that had performed a great service, Zi Yan could only look to Su Luo for help. Those two people’s faces were both enigmatic, making her look like a complete idiot.

At first, Su Luo also didn’t understand it, but after she heard Beichen Ying’s words, she suddenly realized its meaning.

Chapter 1041 – Everyone assembled (5)

“For the time being, just watch, very quickly, this matter will become clear.”
Su Luo smiled mysteriously.

Seeing Zi Yan’s appearance of nearly about to blow one’s top, Su Luo felt it was very amusing.

At any rate, based on signs on the map, after another half a day’s time, they would arrive at Xian’s Wood Residence. Very quickly, everything would be cleared up for her.

The Dragon Scaled Horse ran very fast through the snowy plateau.

On the road to Xian’s Wood Residence, very soon, they saw a group of people returning from this route.

Nangong Liuyun let out a faint command, and the Dragon Scaled Horse immediately stopped.

There were four people returning from the original route.

Situ Ming, Li Yaoyao, were two of them that Su Luo had already encountered from before.

The other two were Luo family’s pair of siblings, Luo Haochen and Luo Dieyi.

Su Luo and Zi Yan had dealt with them before, and had ruthlessly oppressed them that time.

Now, there were eight people, four on each team, both team stood facing each other.

“Xian’s Wood Residence is just up ahead, where are you guys going?” Beichen Ying frowned in displeasure and snorted coldly.

Li Yaoyao retrieved her gaze from Nangong Liuyun. Her lips curled into a

mocking sneer: “Xian’s Wood Residence? Why must we go to Xian’s Wood Residence?”

“That’s right, we’re not going to Xian’s Wood Residence, what are you going to do about it?” Luo Dieyi sneered.

Li Yaoyao and Luo Dieyi were already maternal cousins, their relationship could be considered close, especially now, with the two groups facing off, naturally, she would unanimously go against the outside group.

Just now, Zi Yan was kept in the dark, the other three all knew, only she couldn’t understand it, this kind of feeling already made her feel down.

Now, Li Yaoyao and Luo Dieyi actually came to provoke her annoyance, immediately, our Miss Zi Yan got angry.

“Li Yaoyao, Luo Dieyi, you are already at Xian’s Wood Residence’s gate, now you guys want to turn back? Your brains must be defective!”

Having travelled over land and sea to come here, nearly at the gate and they suddenly don’t want to go in?

Li Yaoyao sneered back: “Zi Yan, I think the one with the problem is you, alright? You guys want to search for the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort for Su Luo, but we are not willing!”

As expected, after Li Yaoyao and Luo Dieyi had joined up and shared their information, very easily, they arrived at this conclusion.

Because Luo family were an aristocratic family of Apothecaries, and Li Yaoyao also knew Su Luo was sickly, so it wasn’t difficult to arrive at this conclusion.

From Li Yaoyao’s perspective, if Su Luo couldn’t obtain the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort, then she would die. After she had died, then wouldn’t Third Senior Brother be hers?

Therefore, not only would she not help Su Luo enter Xian’s Wood Residence to get the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort, on the contrary, she would do everything to impede this.

Luo Dieyi also hated Su Luo to the bones, naturally, she didn’t wish her well. Therefore, these two joined together to convince the other two men.

Consequently, once they reached Xian's Wood Residence, they didn't enter and turned around to come back.

Zi Yan and Beichen Ying exchanged a glance, both of their eyes were filled with anger!

Treacherous vile bastards!

Actually let them guess the truth of this matter.

Then, what's to be done now?

Out of habit, they both cast their gazes towards Nangong Liuyun.

In both of their eyes, this person was the backbone, there was nothing he couldn't solve.

Nangong Liuyun stood there unmoving, his whole body emitting a king's respected aura. He appeared like a sharp edge to the outside, domineeringly strong, not to be ignored.

"Who wants to go?" Nangong Liuyun's eyes cast a side glance at Li Yaoyao. His eyes were penetrated thoroughly with a strong, evil ruthlessness.

Li Yaoyao, who was about to leave, immediately froze mid-step.

She could direct her frigid irony and scorching satire at any of them, without having to hide it. But, when it came to Nangong Liuyun, she couldn't be so rigid, no matter what.

"Third Senior Brother, this is our choice, I hope you can respect it." Li Yaoyao's pair of beautiful eyes stared at Nangong Liuyun.

Chapter 1042 – Everyone assembled (6)

The other intents in her eyes, even though she hadn't said it out loud, but everyone understood.

She wanted Nangong Liuyun to bow his head to her.

But, how could someone as respected as Nangong Liuyun bow his head to her? It was simply impossible.

Nangong Liuyun's beautiful eyes concealed a sinisterness, the corner of his lips pulled up into a sly smile: "You want to go, nobody's going to block your path."

Li Yaoyao immediately stared blankly and froze in place.

This kind of outcome was completely beyond her expectations.

In fact, she knew that since she had already come here, she couldn't possibly return empty-handed.

Because their family and clan would not allow something like this to happen.

Since Grandmaster Rong Yun had suggested it, naturally, the families must have gotten some benefits, otherwise, those old foxes wouldn't have negotiated it so easily.

Li Yaoyao's difficult attitude was merely to force Nangong Liuyun to agree to her conditions.

Therefore, when Nangong Liuyun said those words, Li Yaoyao immediately found herself in a dilemma without a way out, and froze rigidly in place.

"Third Senior Brother, are you certain you really want us to go?" Li Yaoyao bit her lower lip, with tears filling her eyes. As if she had suffered the grievances of being forced to leave.

Nangong Liuyun frowned in disgust.

Every time he thought Li Yaoyao was only malicious to this extent, Li Yaoyao would always surpass his expectations again.

Although Zi Yan didn't understand why Nangong Liuyun would let her go, but since Third Senior Brother had spoken, naturally, he had his reasons.

As a result, Zi Yan took a step forward and shoved Li Yaoyao away. She put her hands on her hips like a bandit, in a resentful manner and with a malicious tone, she said: "If you want to leave, then hurry up and go. You're the one who insists on leaving, don't pretend as if we're the ones forcing you to go, pretending to be wronged, who are you trying to fool!"

"Clap, clap, clap——" Beichen Ying applauded on the side, "Good, well said! Never expected that Miss Zi Yan could say such sharp words."

"Reason is on our side, how can it not be sharp?" Zi Yan proudly flung her bangs back.

Li Yaoyao was put on the spot by these two people's dialogue playing off each other.

"Fine! It's you guys who asked us to go, so don't regret it later!"

Having said that, Li Yaoyao bit down tightly on her lip, and pulled Situ Ming to leave with her!

From beginning till the end, Luo Haochen didn't say a word.

But his eyes narrowed slightly, looking profoundly mysterious, nobody knew what he was thinking.

As Situ Ming was leaving, he looked at Nangong Liuyun with a deep gaze.

He always felt that this matter was not that simple.

After watching them leave, Zi Yan's originally arrogant expression immediately turned to worry: "We're really going to let them go like this? They have three of the keys to Xian's Wood Residence."

Four keys are needed to open Xian's Wood Residence, besides the one in Beichen Ying's hands, the rest were in Li Yaoyao, Situ Ming and Luo Haochen's

hands.

Three out of four keys, not even half were in their hands, what were they supposed to do?

Nangong Liuyun silently stood in place, with a languidness on his shoulders and with clothing swaying in the wind, making him look even more demonic and ruthless.

“Now, what are we going to do?” Zi Yan shrugged her shoulders and looked around the surroundings once.

These three people all had a smile that was not quite a smile meaning in their eyes, unfathomable, impossible for others to make out.

Zi Yan firmly slapped her own forehead.

How could all three of them have guessed, but she didn't have even a bit of clue?

Su Luo laughed, and pulled her to say: “Don't be anxious, let us first go to Xian's Wood Residence, they will come back soon after.”

“Why would they?” Zi Yan asked, still very much puzzled.

Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo into the carriage, Su Luo looked at Zi Yan over his shoulder, and smiled: “Just based on.... We have Nangong Liuyun here, isn't it enough?”

Chapter 1043 – Everyone assembled (7)

Although she still didn't understand, when Zi Yan saw that all three of them seemed to have everything planned out, she also calmed down.

Zi Yan and Beichen Ying followed them to sit in the carriage. They continued in a grandiose manner to Xian's Wood Residence.

Not even two hours had passed, and they could already see the Xian's Wood Residence gates in the distance——

Just at this moment, a burst of fierce fighting sounds came from behind!

Zi Yan's heart suddenly stopped, directly opening the carriage curtain to look back at what was going on.

“My God! In the end, what is this?”

Zi Yan gave a shout of surprise, then subconsciously, she covered her mouth.

The snowy plateau region had no buildings nor shelter, so they could see very far away.

Within a range of five hundred meters, a really fierce battle was taking place!

Fighting while retreating, constantly trying to draw close to Xian's Wood Residence, was Li Yaoyao and those who had just stormed out angrily.

Now, how could they still look as arrogant as they were when leaving from before?

Each and every one of their clothing was ragged and bloodstained. They were covered in blood from head to toe, looking no better than beggars.

Behind them, several Snow Lions pursued relentlessly, unwilling to let go.

In addition to this, countless magical beasts from this snowy region were also attacking the four people up front in waves.

Li Yaoyao was so angry that she nearly cried: “Second Senior Brother, didn’t you save a Snow Lion before? Quickly tell them!”

Two not-yet-fully grown Snow Lions surrounded Li Yaoyao, attacking her until she was stumbling about, wounds continuously decorating her body.

Having heard her words, Situ Ming could only smile bitterly.

Snow Lions were narrow-minded, they certainly would seek revenge. Now, they were chasing after them, most likely, it was because they knew that the death of those three Snow Lions had something to do with them...

Now, they couldn’t wait to rip them apart while still alive, so how could they listen to his words?

Only, he didn’t understand, why would these Snow Lions come to find him? In the end, how did they know?

“Hold on a little longer, very quickly, we will reach Xian’s Wood Residence. Remember, you must not kill a Snow Lion!” Situ Ming warned repeatedly.

If one was killed, and they saw blood. Then, today, they would inevitably be ripped apart while still alive.

At this moment, a Snow Lion quietly jumped up onto Li Yaoyao’s back, and directly targeted her snow-white neck to bite down on.

This time, the entire Snow Lions community had been mobilized from their clan.

At this moment, the little Snow Lion that had climbed up Li Yaoyao’s back, was about the size of the little divine dragon.

Li Yaoyao felt her neck get cold!

As soon as she turned her head, she saw an ugly magical beast with sharp teeth about to bite her neck!

Where would Li Yaoyao have the time to think so much! She picked up that little thing with her left hand and subconsciously stabbed it with the long blade in her right hand!

This was simply a white blade going in and coming out red.

The small little Snow Lion was merely at the fifth level, so it was killed immediately.

“Awoo——!!!”

Seeing this scene before them, the entire Snow Lions group became violently enraged!

They had already lost three leaders today, now, they lost another comrade.

How could this be!

“Roar roar roar!!!” Kill kill kill!!!

The Snow Lion boss in the front looked up to the sky and roared, exploding out with a loud bellow.

After this, a countless number of Snow Lions charged and pounced towards Li Yaoyao.

They were not concerned with the rest of the people.

“Brother, quickly run!” Where would Luo Dieyi find the time to care about Li Yaoyao.

She was looking forward to all of the Snow Lions leaving to besiege Li Yaoyao.

The Luo siblings held on to each other and quickly fled forward like madmen.

Up ahead, there was Nangong Liuyun, this tenth-ranked expert, and strongly fortified walls of Xian’s Wood Residence. If they arrived there, then it would be safe!

“Help, save us!”

Sensing the numerous Snow Lions that were everywhere charging towards her, Li Yaoyao felt like the whole world was about to collapse on her.

Chapter 1044 – Everyone assembled (8)

It seemed as if the Luo siblings didn't hear her calls for help. With skilful quick steps, they flew straight in the direction of the Xian's Wood Residence!

Situ Ming saw the situation Li Yaoyao was in, and almost drew blood from biting down!

He had warned and told her thousands of times, repeating again and again, not to kill the Snow Lions, don't draw blood, but what's the result!

Situ Ming's heart was full of anger.

But to ask him to watch his goddess die in front of him, he just couldn't do it.

If they were to die, he would die first before she was harmed.

Just at this moment of imminent peril, Situ Ming lifted Li Yaoyao up with one hand, and with flying speed, ran forward, his speed soaring to the maximum.

Speed had always been Situ Ming's forte, although he was carrying a person at this time, his survival instinct wouldn't let his speed drop, on the contrary, he went even faster.

Behind him, a crowd of Snow Lions was like waves of smoke surging towards them.

Up ahead, the Luo siblings' figures were getting closer and closer.

"Second Senior Brother, quick, as long as we outrun them, we'll be safe!" Li Yaoyao continuously urged.

Situ Ming's chest stiffened, he looked at Li Yaoyao with a complicated expression.

If she hadn't killed that Snow Lion, then matters wouldn't have reached this step.

“Second Senior Brother, why are you staring blankly, move faster!!!” Li Yao Yao was very anxious and urged him on loudly!

Situ Ming took a deep breath, and took back this kind of oppressive feeling from his heart.

Situ Ming finally was running neck-to-neck with the Luo siblings, but nobody was faster than the other.

The Snow Lions behind them were quickly going to catch up, rushing over from high and low!

Sharp claws ruthlessly reached for Li Yao Yao’s back.

The Snow Lions were full of hatred towards Li Yao Yao, who told Li Yao Yao to kill a cub from their race?

“Ah—— !” Li Yao Yao let out a mournful scream.

That claw was too sharp.

It cut across from high up on her right shoulder down to her left shoulder, nearly taking out a piece of her flesh.

Li Yao Yao staggered, almost falling in place.

Now, the pain was so intense that she felt almost numb, her intestines becoming even more green.

Fortunately, Situ Ming took care of her well, he practically carried her on his shoulder to run forward.

Luo Dieyi was scared out of her wits by the sight of the wound on Li Yao Yao’s back.

“It’s all your fault! If it weren’t for you inciting us to leave, we wouldn’t be suffering the Snow Lions’ pursuit to kill us!” Luo Dieyi condemned while panting with rage.

Li Yao Yao almost threw up a mouthful of blood from regret.

Li Yao Yao wanted to curse back, but even taking a breath made her lungs hurt as if it was in a knot. She simply couldn’t utter a single curse.

Luo Dieyi continued to fiercely curse her: “If it wasn’t for you guys going to

ask some Snow Lions to hold up Nangong Liuyun, how could they have been killed by Nangong Liuyun?”

“Eh, that’s not right!” Luo Dieyi finally returned to her senses, “They were killed by Nangong Liuyun, why are they seeking revenge on us?”

This was simply too fishy!

A trace of remorse flashed through Situ Ming’s eyes.

It was no wonder that before, Third Junior Brother let them leave, so it turned out that he had already set up a trap just waiting for them.

Third Junior Brother.... We are your brothers and sisters under the same teacher, for a mysterious woman, you’re going to let us die?

Such a vicious heart!

At this time, not only did Li Yaoyao’s body hurt, her heart hurt until it was practically suffocating.

Third Senior Brother.... So, this killing step was really set up by Third Senior Brother.

Did he really want to kill her so badly? There really wasn’t a slight place in his heart for her?

Just thinking of this possibility, Li Yaoyao’s felt her entire body go soft, nearly unable to take another step.

Up ahead, far far away, they could see those four people.

Their attitude was confident and at ease, as they contentedly stood in front of Xian’s Wood Residence’s gate, talking and smiling in cheerful voices.

In contrast to them, every one of them was battered and exhausted, filthy like beggars.

Chapter 1045 – Take money to buy a life (1)

Beichen Ying's eyebrows shot up proudly, smiling happily as he watched them in their sorry state of being chased.

“Eh, who did you guys provoke? How did you guys become so filthy from head to toe?” Beichen Ying exaggerated, and moved closer to them, looking left then right.

Zi Yan's expression was even more exaggerated.

She was holding her stomach and laughing heartily, close to rolling around on the ground from laughter.

“Ha ha ha ha ha, I'm dying from laughter, ouch, hey— I say, Li Yaoyao, isn't your luck a little lacking?”

Li Yaoyao, having been besieged by Snow Lions, had a belly full of anger. Now, she was being mocked by Zi Yan like this, she directly vomit out a mouthful of blood.

“Didn't you guys leave? Why did you guys come back?” Su Luo leaned against Nangong Liuyun's body, with feigned innocence and at a loss expression on her face.

Zi Yan smilingly answered Su Luo: “Silly Luo Luo, you still don't understand this from watching? This is them wanting us to help them ward off the Snow Lions!”

Once Zi Yan said it out loud, Li Yaoyao and her companions' faces immediately turned red.

Indeed, they all had this idea, the idea might be good, but it doesn't sound good ah. Especially under the circumstances of them having already left before to return right now.

“Could it be that they don’t know that Snow Lions don’t randomly make enemies?” Su Luo looked as if she was somewhat confused.

“Su Luo, now, we have ended up like this, you must be happy, right? Are you pleased?” No matter what, Li Yaoyao’s hatred could not be concealed.

Su Luo faintly smiled as she looked at her: “Yes, I’m very happy right now, very pleased. Because this play is really fun to watch, could you guys perform it a bit longer?”

A free martial arts performance with real people, moreover, it was the the life-and-death kind ah, very hard to come by.

Li Yaoyao was angered until her complexion turned ashen!

Situ Ming, while fighting, was also observing the situation around him at the same time.

Originally, seeing Nangong Liuyun and the others standing there watching without lifting a finger, he was already very dissatisfied. Now, seeing Su Luo continuing to hit them while they were down, this was called the uncle could endure it but the wife could not!

“Third Junior Brother! Why haven’t you come over quickly to help!” Situ Ming, while retreating, also pulled Li Yaoyao to draw closer to Nangong Liuyun’s side.

Nangong Liuyun’s forehead wrinkled slightly, a touch of annoyance flashing through his eyes.

Beichen Ying coldly smiled: “Situ Ming, who do you think you are, daring to talk like this to our second brother.”

Situ Ming was clearly using his identity as Second Senior Brother to pressure Second Brother (1). Beichen Ying loathed this the most.

Situ Ming frowned: “Young Master Beichen, it’s better if you mingled less in Purgatory City’s business.”

Beichen Ying snorted heavily: “You think this young master got involved? If you hadn’t gone to provoke the Snow Lions, how could it end up like this?”

Situ Ming was immediately choked off.

Indeed, he was the first to go provoke the Snow Lions, but, how could Beichen Ying know of this matter? Situ Ming secretly clenched his teeth.

The Snow Lions were interesting too.

They didn't expand the scope of their revenge. They didn't attack Nangong Liuyun, only endlessly attacked the original culprits.

Li Yaoyao, seeing she couldn't keep this up, continuously to pled to Nangong Liuyun for help.

“Third Senior Brother, even if you don't consider our former mutual affections. But, based on us having the keys, you also can't just stand there and not lift a finger ah, Third Senior Brother!”

Mutual affection from former days? Nangong's thin dark red lips hooked up into a cold smile.

The Jade Lake's Li family chased to kill his precious Luo Luo, that was also called mutual affection from former days?

“Little Junior Sister, those keys cannot be taken away by the Snow Lions.” Nangong Liuyun stood with his hands clasped behind his back and an indifferent smile on his face.

The implication being, even if they died here, the keys would remain behind. Furthermore, the Snow Lions were more obedient.

“Clearly, it was you guys that killed those three Snow Lions! Why are we being chased to be killed by them?” Luo Dieyi's face was full of hatred! She was really not reconciled.

1) In this sentence Situ Ming is Second Senior Brother to Nangong Liuyun because they had the same teacher. Beichen Ying calls Nangong Liuyun second brother because among the four of them (Beichen Ying, Nangong Liuyun, Lan Xuan, and Anye Ming—Nangong Liuyun is second eldest so in Chinese Beichen calls him second eldest.) Please let me know in comment sections if I should translate Beichen Ying calling Nangong Liuyun as Second Brother or Second Eldest to avoid confusion with Situ Ming being Second Senior Brother.

Chapter 1046 – Take money to buy a life (2)

Su Luo played with the plump Nine-tailed Spirit Fox with whirling eyes in her arms. She glanced at Luo Dieyi with a ghost of a smile.

“Did you see it with your own eyes?”

“Of course, I... “ Luo Dieyi almost blurted it out, but she managed to catch herself at the last second.

If she admitted to it, then the Snow Lions wouldn't be their only enemy, Nangong Liuyun would also turn into one as well.

Nangong Liuyun's eyes narrowed dangerously, his pupils were enchanting and frivolous, absolutely beautiful and abstruse.

“You guys want to live?” Nangong Liuyun's voice was exceptionally sharp and arrogant.

“Yes!” Luo Dieyi and Li Yaoyao shrieked in unison!

Those damned Snow Lions!

Drawing them all the way here and actually wouldn't attack them!

Nangong Liuyun's noble jawline was arrogantly lifted up in an ice-cold manner, his thin red lips slowly curling up: “Wanting to live is really not that difficult.”

Seeing the intensity of the battle progress, Nangong Liuyun gave off the intense pressure of a strong expert.

Suddenly, everybody felt like the surrounding atmosphere became suffocating, a formidable force was compelling them to bend down their backs.

The Snow Lions felt this murderous aura and immediately stopped their attacks. They ran in an orderly manner to behind their leader, waiting for a

command.

Li Yaoyao, completely lacking any form, fell down to sit on the ground, grasping large mouthfuls of air one after another.

At this moment, her hair was disheveled, clothing was ragged. She was covered from head to toe in a mixture of blood and sweat, she cut an exceedingly sorry figure.

She was grasping for large breaths of air, obviously, she was extremely exhausted.

Nangong Liuyun's dark red thin lips faintly curled up, casting them sidelong glances in an arrogant and unbridled manner: "One thousand green colored crystal stones for one life. Those that don't have it now will write an IOU slip."

Having heard what was said, Su Luo nearly burst out in laughter.

When did Nangong Liuyun become like her, having a habit of raking in the money?

One thousand green-colored crystal stones was not a small amount oh.

Don't know what benefits Master had given the four great families before they were persuaded to open Xian's Wood Residence at an earlier time. But, if they received benefits without doing the job, this was certainly in violation of the agreement.

Moreover, the green-colored crystal stones in Su Luo's space were nearly all consumed in order for her to cultivate.

Therefore, Su Luo endorsed Nangong Liuyun's decision with both hands.

Before, she had indeed mumbled in a low voice to herself several sentences on how there weren't enough green-colored crystal stones. But at that time, Nangong Liuyun only smiled enigmatically.

Never expected that he actually calculated this plan on the body of these people.

Let the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox go to the Snow Lions' community to report the news, framing Li Yaoyao's group and forcing them into a life-and-death crisis. Then, ask them to hand over green-colored crystal stones to buy their life.

Nangong Liuyun, this guy, was really two-faced, layer after layer, he had calculated against them many times.

Su Luo felt that this lifetime, the best thing she did was to be together with Nangong Liuyun.

Once Nangong Liuyun had spoken, Li Yaoyao and the others were stunned.

“Third Junior Brother, what are you doing?!” The person who had the hardest time accepting this was Situ Ming this Second Senior Brother.

He completely could not accept that his own junior brother would take green-colored crystal stones in exchange for saving his life.

Nangong Liuyun’s gaze was sharp and deep, his eyebrows shooting up in a faint mocking manner: “Are your eyes there only for decoration? You can’t see?”

Beichen Ying gave a ‘pfft’ and burst out in laughter.

Situ Ming suddenly was dumbfounded, and foolishly stood in place.

This... was this still the Third Junior Brother he knew? How could he do something like this?

“Third Junior Brother!” Situ Ming clenched his teeth in rage, a trace of pain flashing through his eyes, “We are fellow apprentices under the same master, with more than ten years of friendship, how can you....”

“Second Senior Brother, this is the last time that I, Nangong Liuyun, will call you by this title.” Nangong Liuyun stood with his hands behind his back, black hair pouring down in torrents like spilled ink, hanging down over his broad shoulders. The contrast made him seem even more respectable, proud, ruthless and devilishly charming.

Chapter 1047 – Take money to buy a life (3)

“You want to kill me, go ahead, but touching my Luo Luo is absolutely unacceptable!” Nangong Liuyun’s manner, in an instant, turned brash, dark and ruthless. His murderous aura soared to the sky.

“Others might not know you had saved a Snow Lion before, but do you really think you can conceal this from me?” Nangong Liuyun pressured him step by step, his innate arrogance, nobility and aggressiveness were clearly visible.

Situ Ming opened his mouth a few times, but found that his throat felt like it was being pinched off. He couldn’t utter a word.

That kind of invisible deterrence force and oppressive pressure Nangong Liuyun released, actually made this Second Senior Bother feel afraid, terrified as if he saw Master before him.

“Therefore –” Nangong Liuyun reached the verdict, “Not killing you guys immediately is me being benevolent. You guys should stop before going too far. Otherwise, if you continue with winning an inch and wanting a foot...”

Nangong Liuyun lifted his eyes up to look around, the smile on his face was alluring, demonically charming, mysterious and cunning.

“Then, being ripped apart and eaten by the magical beasts in the North is also a pretty good ending.”

At this moment, Nangong Liuyun was like the gods high above, coldly looking down at all living beings. And the several people in front of him were like ants to him.

All of a sudden, not a sound could be heard.

Terrifyingly quiet.

Situ Ming was dumbstruck.

Li Yaoyao's petal-like lips quivered slightly...

Third Senior Brother, your heart is truly ruthless, he would actually say such words. He completely disregarded their mutual affection from the past...

Li Yaoyao's tear-filled eyes looked towards Nangong Liuyun, in it was hidden bitterness, grievance and pain mixed together.

"There isn't much time, I'll count to three, afterwards, you're responsible for the consequences."

Nangong Liuyun's whole body gave off an invisible oppressive pressure, nobody dared to meet his dark gloomy eyes.

"One."

Nangong Liuyun waved his hand, the Snow Lions on the side suddenly cried out and charged ahead.

The four people were completely caught off guard, once again, they were thrown into a life-and-death situation.

"Two."

Nangong Liuyun's keen, hawk-like eyes were sharp and cold, his thin red lips were cold, detached and heartless.

"I agree! I agree!" Luo Dieyi, who had been pounced down to the ground and nearly ripped to pieces by the Snow Lion's sharp teeth, immediately nodded her head in agreement.

"I agree too." Luo Haochen's cold gloomy voice echoed immediately after.

Although one thousand green-colored crystal stones was a lot, but it wasn't more precious than one's life. If they died, then they would have nothing.

He was sure that if he didn't agree, Nangong Liuyun would definitely be able to watch them die.

There was no point in using family influence, reputation and virtue to pull Nangong Liuyun to their side, it was simply useless.

Only two people remained.

Li Yaoyao tearfully nodded her head in grief: "I agree, I agree!"

She could feel faintly that Third Senior Brother really did not like her anymore, this was worse than killing her.

Situ Ming's face seemed to be enveloped in cold frost, now, he was under their roof, he had no choice but to lower his head.

He could only clench his teeth and agree. He secretly made a decision in his heart, that once he returned, he must "put in a few good words" for Third Junior Brother in front of their master.

Nangong Liuyun's unsympathetic gaze swept by them, then his dark red moist lips smirked even more devilishly: "Write."

With a wave of his hand, writing tools and paper appeared before them.

The space bag!

Everyone could clearly see, that Nangong Liuyun was in possession of a most prized space bag for storage space.

Momentarily, everyone was admiring, jealous and regretful.

Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun calmly, her lips curling up into a smile.

Nangong Liuyun used the space bag to leave an unforgettable impression, so her own space would be hard to be exposed.

He really considered her needs in every aspect.

Su Luo's hand that held Nangong Liuyun's hand tightened a few times.

The Nangong Liuyun that had a murderous aura surrounding him, not allowing strangers to approach, just a moment ago, turned to smile at Su Luo while raising an eyebrow. His smile had a bit of being pleased with himself, like a child taking credit for his achievements.

Chapter 1048 – Take money to buy a life (4)

Pure white as snow, bright sunshine, and there was also that flowy elegant black robe. All of this accented his magnificent, pearl-like face, making it even more brilliant and dazzling.

This was Nangong Liuyun, the man who will accompany her for the rest of her life.

Really great.

These people suffered through the humiliation in silence, writing the IOU slip and handing it over to Nangong Liuyun in grief and indignation.

Nangong Liuyun received it and made a show of examining it carefully.

His manner of scrutinizing it so seriously nearly angered these people that owed the debt to death.

They could get angry but didn't dare say it, they could only obediently wait by the side.

The Snow Lions were eager to try out their sharp teeth and waited to pounce over at any moment. Therefore, they were itching to immediately open the gates to Xian's Wood Residence, afraid of other issues that may arise.

After Nangong Liuyun unhurriedly scanned it, he then collected the IOUs in an unhurried manner, and only then, did he slowly say: "Open the gates."

Immediately, Luo Dieyi and others felt like they had received amnesty, and their hearts relaxed.

Once the gates of Xian's Wood Residence opened, they rushed in, fast as lightning, in a line, trying to outdo one another to be first.

Su Luo laughingly shook her head: "Before, they had strutted off and left,

now, they have entered faster than rabbits, really interesting.”

With a hand movement, Nangong Liuyun had put Su Luo on his back, his every gesture was natural and at ease.

He gave a soft laugh that was gentle and kind: “Watching this performance must have tired you out, your husband will carry you in.”

“Don’t talk nonsense.” Su Luo slapped his shoulder.

Nangong Liuyun’s smile was as gorgeous and brilliant as the cherry blossoms in March: “This matter will happen sooner or later, let me first practice using this address, so I can get used to it earlier.”

The atmosphere at this moment was peaceful and full of contentment.

Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo on his back, step by step, he unhurriedly went in.

Xian’s Wood Residence.

Inside was a spacious mansion.

The plants and trees were green and lush, the pavilions in the gardens were like those in worldly manors.

At this moment, everyone stood in place, staring blankly, not knowing what direction was the road they need to take.

“Eh!” Situ Ming suddenly cried out in surprise.

In the wake of his cry of surprise, everybody gathered over.

In front of Situ Ming was a stone table.

“This stone table...” Li Yaoyao’s hand stroked the surface of the stone, suddenly, her eyes lit up.

“This is the Sunlight Stone!” Li Yaoyao said with certainty.

The Sunlight Stone was a material used to refined High grade weapons, this material was extremely valuable, even the entire Jade Lake’s Li family could not afford a lot of it.

Now, it was actually used so extravagantly as a stone table!

Simply too lavish.

If she could, Li Yaoyao was itching to carry this entire table back with her.

However, when she applied some force on the table, she realized that the stone table was probably sealed there, no matter how much strength she used, she couldn't move it even a little bit.

“A pity ah.” Li Yaoyao's expression was filled with regret.

Situ Ming accompanied her at her side and shook his head: “If it was that easily taken away, then for so many years, very likely, it would have been taken away earlier. It wouldn't have remained here until now.”

The keys to Xian's Wood Residence were in the hands of the four great families, every certain numbers of years, the four great families' younger generations would agree on a time to enter together.

The flowers, plants and trees here, every one of them were value objects. Like Situ Ming had said, after so many years, if it could be taken away, then it would have already been taken away long ago.

“The four keys can only open Xian's Wood Residence's front gates, if you really want to enter the nine different Palace Halls, you have to find the treasure of this residence——Rebel Dragon's Jade.” Beichen Ying had read the ancient records in his home, this time, he actively told everyone.

“Split up into two people per group to search for it.” Nangong Liuyun had Su Luo on his back, and took the lead to search eastwards.

Seeing Nangong Liuyun piggybacking Su Luo, the fists at Li Yaoyao's side clenched tightly. A horrible malicious light shoot out from her eyes.

Chapter 1049 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(1)

Nangong Liuyun took off eastwards with Su Luo on his back.

“Little Junior Sister, let’s go.” Situ Ming looked at Li Yaoyao and sighed faintly.

“Second Senior Brother, do you blame me? Are you blaming me for throwing a fit and leaving?” Li Yaoyao raised her palm-sized face and the bruise on her face made her look even more pitiful.

If she hadn’t thrown a fit, they also wouldn’t have been injured to this degree.

Situ Ming’s heart originally had a bit of resentment, but seeing Li Yaoyao’s pitiful appearance, that bit of blame immediately vanished like smoke.

“No, let’s go.” Situ Ming watched Nangong Liuyun’s leaving back, his eyes flashing slightly.

Without reaching a critical moment, how else could you make out a person’s heart? Who would have thought that Third Junior Brother would be so heartless?

Using money to buy a life, moreover, the object of this was his own brothers and sisters from the same teacher. He really could do it, too.

“Little Junior Sister, Third Junior Brother really isn’t your husband, you should...”

“No!” Li Yaoyao obstinately raised her chin, cold light flickering in her eyes, her expression firm: “Third Senior Brother must be mine! Now, he is merely confused by that sly fox of a witch Su Luo! There will be a day when he realizes who is the person that loves him the most!”

Li Yaoyao’s entire body trembled slightly, her hands clenching into fists. She

was resolute as if meeting an enemy.

Situ Ming had a breath of air stifled in his throat, not moving up nor down. He really didn't know how best to advise her.

The one in the midst of it was confused, while onlookers saw clearly. Nangong Liuyun didn't have any feelings left for Yaoyao, however, this foolish girl still stubbornly persisted in going down the wrong path.

Situ Ming was angry, anxious and very much helpless, he could only choke back this breath of air.

He had no other choice but to change the subject: "Let's not mention these, now, the most important thing is to find the entrance to the Palace Halls."

The party of eight had been divided into four groups.

Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo went east.

Situ Ming and Li Yaoyao went west.

Beichen Ying and Zi Yan went north.

Luo Haochen and Luo Dieyi went south.

The four groups searched inside and out, inch by inch, trying to find the location of the entrance.

However, the three groups indeed searched diligently, not letting a grass and a single tree slip by, carefully inspecting each.

However, Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo weren't this diligent.

At this time, Su Luo was sitting on the swings, lazily basking in the sun.

The little divine dragon and little spirit fox each was sitting on the left and right of Su Luo's shoulders, swinging along, looking extremely content.

"You're probably tired, stop and rest a bit." Nangong Liuyun, with a spoiled and pampering manner, pulled the swing to a stop.

Others were painstakingly searching, while his girl was playing around over here.

"The spirit force here is very comfortable, like bathing in a spring breeze, as if

every pore is absorbing the spirit force.” Su Luo’s face seemed to have a bit of rosy taint, not as pale as before.

“Of course, a bit of the spirit force would also escape from the entrance to the Nine Different Palace Halls.” Nangong Liuyun laughed enigmatically.

Su Luo teased the little divine dragon, and the corner of her mouth hooked up slightly.

“Woah! The two of you are goofing off!” Beichen Ying, in a flash, quickly arrived in front of them, laughing happily as he moved closer to them.

Soon after, Zi Yan walked over, and said in surprise: “So it turns out that you two already knew earlier the entrance is here, and watched us as we searched everywhere for it like fools!”

Su Luo’s smile perked up: “Didn’t you guys come over now?”

Zi Yan smiled: “It was because of Little Shadow! He simply wouldn’t go and search at all. He only said that following you guys would be correct, and he was right.”

Beichen Ying was very pleased with himself.

After eating so many depressing losses, how could he not learn to be a bit smarter?

In this kind of situation where it was dependent on luck, Beichen Ying would firmly walk under Su Luo’s flag.

Su Luo, while teasing the little divine dragon, said: “Let us wait some more, see how long it will take them to search over here.”

Chapter 1050 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(2)

In fact, after entering, Su Luo had known where the entrance was.

Because the little divine dragon was present, there wasn't an entrance that couldn't be found.

However, if Su Luo had so easily found the entrance, not only would those people not be grateful, instead, she would draw their suspicion.

Therefore, Su Luo simply sat here to rest with Nangong Liuyun and let those foolish people search for themselves.

In any case, every blade of grass and tree was sealed, no one could take it away.

As for Beichen Ying and Zi Yan.....according to Beichen Ying's adaptable temper, after he had eaten several losses under her hand, if he still couldn't crawled up, then he wouldn't be Beichen Ying.

The party of four people leisurely sat on the grassy meadow.

With a wave of Su Luo's hand, a small square table appeared in the middle of the four people seated in a circle.

Two boxes with black jade and white jade chess pieces were placed properly on the table.

Nangong Liuyun and Beichen Ying exchanged a smile and unhurriedly and contentedly played chess.

Su Luo waved her hand once again and another shorter table appeared, half-covered with pastries and snacks. Additionally, there was still fresh tea simmering on a red clay stove.

Zi Yan sighed very ruefully: “Are we adventuring or vacationing?”

“We’re vacationing, they’re adventuring.” The corner of Su Luo’s mouth perked up into a shallow smile.

The ‘them’ she said referred to whom, everyone was well aware of.

Compared to their contentment, at present, Li Yaoyao and them were about to collapse.

Their bodies all had injuries.

And inside this Xian’s Wood Residence, actually it was filled with the sweet fragrance of medicinal herbs, the aroma assailing their nostrils.

Just one careless planted grass on the roadside, had the efficacy of millennium-old medicine, moreover, it could effortlessly treat their external wounds.

Not only that, the stone table, that low small table, each and every one of them were valuable. Just scraping off a little bit of the Fire Star Wood on the short small table would cure their injuries.

However!

What made them collapse was that these medicines they urgently needed, they could only look but couldn’t touch, they wanted it but couldn’t obtain it.

Because their surroundings were sealed, when their hands moved to touch it, a tenacious shield would block them.

If they dared to use spirit power, then the person would directly be sent flying.

Li Yaoyao and them didn’t believe it, but being sent flying again and again, finally, with expressions of wanting to cry but having no tears, they believed it.

If they hadn’t seen these medicines, then fine, but they saw it, moreover, it was within reach, yet no matter what, they couldn’t get it. This kind of feeling was like ten million insects and ants biting them, itchy as well as painful.

These four people that were heavily wounded, in this huge Xian’s Wood Residence, in the areas they were assigned, they searched, one circle after

another. No matter what, they still couldn't find the entrance.

Ultimately, these four people that were exhausted to the extreme gathered together.

"Did you guys find it?" Li Yaoyao gently looked at Luo Dieyi.

You couldn't help but say, Li Yaoyao absolutely was a heroine that was adaptable to circumstances.

Before, she was itching to run ahead of Luo Dieyi to make Luo Dieyi serve as the sacrificial victim. But now, she had once again become the gentle, soft and good older sister.

Luo Dieyi coldly sneered: "Don't tell me you guys found it?"

"Dieyi, are you still angry at this older sister?" Li Yaoyao stared at her brokenheartedly and pulled her hand, looking as if she had been extremely wronged.

Luo Dieyi shook off her hand and coldly smiled: "With regards to those people that want me to die, I don't have the strength to get angry."

"Younger sister, how could you say it like this.....Are you still blaming me for taking you away, bringing you guys into danger? But at that time, no one knew that the Snow Lions were waiting there ah."

Li Yaoyao's tears seemed to appear at will, the action was very smooth.

"Humph!" Luo Dieyi turned her face away.

She didn't forget that, at the most critical moment, Li Yaoyao, this older female cousin, was only worried about herself and running away.

Chapter 1051 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(3)

“Younger Sister, in the present circumstances, could it be you still can see it clearly? If you can’t see it clearly, surely Older Male Cousin can see it clearly?” Li Yaoyao looked at Luo Haochen with a burning gaze.

Luo Haochen’s eyes narrowed slightly, his gaze was sharp as blades, and he stared coldly at Li Yaoyao.

Luo Haochen’s feelings were really somewhat complicated.

Towards this fairy-like, extraordinarily and outstanding younger female cousin, before, he liked her, one could say that he really liked her, liked her to the point of wanting to ask to marry her.

However, after going through the battle from before, and after Li Yaoyao’s choice at that critical moment of life and death, he was somewhat unable to see her as clearly.

Therefore, Luo Haochen remained enigmatically silent.

“Older Cousin, you saw it right, Beichen Ying has a very good relationship with Su Luo, now, they have probably already joined together. If the four of us don’t unite, we absolutely would be consumed by them until even dregs won’t remain!” Li Yaoyao was bewitching, enunciating every sentence and every word.

This point, Luo Haochen understood without Li Yaoyao having to say it.

“Therefore, we must unite, only when we are united would we have the ability to withstand them.”

The three people all stayed silent and didn’t speak.

Li Yaoyao continued to bewitch them: “The other side’s four people are also united, but they have a fatal weak point. And that weakness is precisely the other party’s weakest point.”

“What weak point?” Luo Haochen finally spoke.

Li Yaoyao half muttered to herself, and finally said two words: “Su Luo.”

Once these words came out, the two men nodded faintly.

Su Luo was injured to that degree, even walking a step was difficult. Therefore, through her, it was the best breakthrough point of their defense.

However.....

Luo Dieyi sneered: “Jade Lake’s fairy, you want to use us three to help you eliminate Su Luo so you can get Nangong Liuyun, right? This scheme of yours is rather a bit too good!”

The fury in Li Yaoyao’s heart ignited into a raging blaze, she wished she could immediately kill this loathsome girl before her eyes with a thousand cuts.

But now was a crucial moment, and this loathsome girl still had her uses. As a result, Li Yaoyao temporarily suppressed the rage in her heart. Instead, a having-been-wronged-expression appeared at the corner of her mouth: “Younger Sister, can it be that you didn’t see it? In Third Senior Brother’s heart and eyes there is only Su Luo alone, regardless of whether Su Luo is dead or alive, he will never turn back to be together with me.”

Luo Dieyi nodded her head in satisfaction: “These words are not fake. Regardless if Su Luo is alive or dead, just based on Nangong Liuyun’s loathing for you, it’s absolutely impossible for him to turn back and be together with you.”

Luo Dieyi’s words were like a sword, directly stabbing Li Yaoyao in the heart.

Li Yaoyao’s figure swayed a bit and she sucked in a sharp breath of air, only like this was she able to keep her overflowing rage from exploding out.

Loathing? Before, Third Senior Brother was so good to her, how could he possibly loathe her? Now, in order to curry favor with Su Luo, that little slut, he deliberately faked that dismissive manner towards her! Li Yaoyao firmly

believed in this point.

Li Yaoyao sucked in a deep breath, steadied her state of mind, and only then did she slowly speak: “Now, we are on the same boat, we must unite together to confront a common enemy, Younger Sister, what do you say?”

Luo Dieyi cast her a glance and turned away with a snort.

Luo Haochen nodded imperceptibly: “What Younger Female Cousin said is correct.”

With regards to Su Luo, Luo Haochen hated her until he was gnashing his teeth, itching to bite her flesh and drink her blood. His hatred was deep as the ocean, absolutely irreconcilable.

The hatred of being buried on the bottom of the mountain that day, Luo Haochen and Luo Dieyi absolutely wanted to avenge it.

Even though Li Yaoyao might not necessarily be trustworthy, Su Luo, however, was their mortal enemy. Therefore, without suspense, the two siblings and Li Yaoyao formed an alliance.

、
Situ Ming only quietly stood at the side.

In the battle from before, he had exerted himself the most, nearly drawing in more than half of the Snow Lions.

Chapter 1052 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(4)

Even until now, Little Junior Sister still hadn't said one sentence of concern about him. She also hadn't asked a sentence about the condition of his injuries.

Her heart was filled entirely with how to kill Su Luo.....

The hands at Situ Ming's sides tightened slightly.

He felt that the fairy-like goddess in his heart was somewhat different from before.

The four people searched another three to four times going back and forth. Their bruised bodies from before almost couldn't bear it, only then did they stop to meet up again.

"What's to be done?" Li Yaoyao frowned, "Continuing like this isn't the best way."

"Why is it that there is only us four people meeting, why hasn't there been any movement from the four people on the other side?" Luo Dieyi felt it was somewhat wrong.

Once these words were said, the three people were all startled.

That's right, they were coming and going from searching and were tired out like dogs. Why was there a completely a lack of movement from those other people ah?

Could it be, they had already found the entrance and had gone in by themselves?

"Let's go!" Li Yaoyao's expression changed, she took the lead and went eastwards to where Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo went.

“We’ll go northwards.” Luo Haochen pulled Luo Dieyi along and was just about to go north.

The northside was the place being searched by Beichen Ying and his group.

“No, we’ll go eastwards! I have a premonition, the entrance will certainly be in the east!” Li Yaoyao’s complexion was weird and left no room for debate.

The party of people grandiosely went eastwards.

Without having to walk for a long time, they saw those four content and leisurely people.

Nangong Liuyun and Beichen Ying sat on the ground, playing chess.

Su Luo leaned against Nangong Liuyun’s shoulder and watched with great interest.

Zi Yan gathered close to Beichen Ying, giving him pointers.

And beside them were fragrant and tasty snacks.

Snacks!

Coming to Xian’s Wood Residence to adventure, they actually prepared snacks? Don’t tell me they thought this was a vacation???

They were tired like dogs, looking for the entrance, but what about these people before their eyes? So leisurely as if they were on a vacation!

This contrast angered Li Yaoyao!

At this moment, her complexion was enveloped in cold frost, her figure stiffly standing in place.

Fury was also burning in Situ Ming’s eyes.

Such a good Third Junior Brother, this behavior simply was thoroughly selfish.

The Luo siblings were also filled with righteous indignation and were endlessly furious.

However, the two people playing chess seemed to not have felt the hostility, they continued to play as if nobody else was present.

The two people watching were also the same, with a concentrated

expression, as if trapped in the game of chess and hard to extricate themselves.

Li Yaoyao was so angry that she nearly gave off smoke!

These people!

Seeing that they had come over, not only were there no trace of guilt, on the contrary, they continued to play chess with great interest.

“You guys……” before Li Yaoyao’s questions of blame could be asked, when who would have thought—— Nangong Liuyun frowned slightly, he flung his sleeve, and in the next instant, Li Yaoyao seemed to be nailed in place, unable to budge.

Her mouth seemed to have been stitched shut by someone, even if she wanted to open it, she couldn’t.

Moreover, there seemed to be an invisible protective screen in front of them, isolating them on the outside, making it hard to take a step forward.

Nangong Liuyun’s hair resembled the deep black as ink color in an ink painting.

With an ink-black colored gown, that made him look even more clear, bright and pure white, like the autumn moon.

Not long after, Nangong Liuyun’s black chest piece landed.

For a moment, it was as if all the King’s horses and all the King’s men surged forward, with the sound of the war horses’ iron hooves and the countless number of horses’ whinnying arriving in all directions. A rumbling noise echoed.

Beichen Ying’s expression was stretched taut, his head and face were covered in sweat, as if he had been bathed by rain water.

Don’t know how long he sat there blankly, ultimately, he shook his head in disappointment.

A crushing defeat.

“This chess game is too depressing!” Beichen Ying’s forehead was filled with sweat, it could clearly be seen how great of a pressure he was under from before.

He pushed the chess pieces away, feigning anger and getting up.

When he had placed his third chess piece down, in fact he had already lost.

Chapter 1053 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(5)

However, he continued to commit suicide until there was no way out. While Nangong Liuyun once again was tut-tutting on the side closing in on him.

The situation afterwards, was simply Second Brother forcing him to move, step by step, everything was all pushed forward by him.

Wherever Nangong Liuyun wanted him to go, after he pondered over the potential moves and results, he still could only move that step Nangong Liuyun had arranged.

He continuously resisted, continuously seeking ways to break out of the enclosure, but he was powerless.

Tricky and unpredictable, everything was within a turn of his hand.

This round of chess make Beichen Ying's heart extremely depressed and disheartened.

However, he had just stood up, when he suddenly felt a heat slowly rise from his pubic region.

Beichen Ying stared blankly at his second brother and was immediately speechless.

“What are you waiting for.” Nangong Liuyun gracefully and languidly cast him a glance.

Compared to Beichen Ying's excitement, Nangong Liuyun seemed a lot more calm.

“Eh, oh!” Only then did Beichen Ying come to his senses!

This chess game was not played in vain, Nangong was using the power of his

tenth rank to pressure him to a critical point. At the last moment, Nangong helped him break through.

Beichen Ying had already been stuck at the beginning of the eighth rank for a long time and couldn't breakthrough. Now, under Nangong Liuyun's pressure, his confined spirit power unexpectedly began to loosen.

Beichen Ying, without saying anything further, sat cross-legged and sank into this moment of enlightenment.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth stuck up slightly.

Every layer of the Nine Different Palace Halls was dangerous, Beichen Ying was very fortunate to be able to break through at this time.

The people on Li Yaoyao's side saw Beichen Ying playing chess, and then all of a sudden, he sat down in a moment of enlightenment. Each and every one of them looked at each other in dismay.

Even playing chess could lead to a breakthrough? Impossible right?

Just at this moment, the black clouds in the sky changed, a countless amount of spirit power gathered around Beichen Ying's body.

Beichen Ying simply felt a vast and limitless amount of spirit power coming together into one, like a sharp blade thrusting towards him, thin as a cicada wing's shield.

For a moment, it was like a violent huge wave breaking through a dam. The spirit power grandiosely and madly rushed forth along the way.

On top of Beichen Ying's head, rays of light continuously sprung up, until finally, it all converged into a sphere that entered into his head.

"Even like this you can advance a rank?" The Luo siblings simply became flabbergasted from watching.

Beichen Ying broke through from the beginning of the eighth rank to the middle of the eighth rank.

Just when everyone was bewildered and without waiting for them to take a breath.

One after another, rays of light once again entered Beichen Ying's entire body.

"Heavens, oh heavens, this is impossible, right?" Luo Dieyi's mouth was opened wide as she foolishly stared.

Luo Haochen was also in disbelief.

Those spirit power that didn't enter Beichen Ying's body once again converged, and finally, became a ball of light that flew into Beichen Ying's mind.

"Peak of the eighth rank? All of a sudden, in such a short time, he is already at the peak of eighth rank?" Luo Haochen muttered to himself.

Ever since he was buried underground with his body seriously injured, the old ancestor of his family had taken out a spirit medicine that had been collected for countless years for him to use.

At the same time, five experts in his family was sacrificed, using a secret method to cut off a portion of their spirit power for him to use. Like this, he was only able to be promoted to the peak of the eighth rank.

However, that bastard Beichen Ying, just sat down to play a game of chess and was then promoted? Moreover, he was even promoted two ranks in a row?

How could you ask Luo Haochen to endure this ah?

At this moment, everyone present had cast their gazes towards Nangong Liuyun.

Beichen Ying's advancement absolutely had something to do with him!

When everyone was still dumbstruck, Beichen Ying slowly opened his eyes.

Nangong Liuyin indifferently glanced at him: "Your state still hasn't taken shape, it needs to be strengthened in battle."

The implication being that he needed to battle, battle and battle once again.

Through endless battles, his state would stabilize and thereby, he would truly to be in control of the strength at the peak of eighth rank.

"Ok!" Beichen Ying excitedly nodded his head repeatedly!

The past two years, he had eaten enough suffering in the Magical Beast

Forest. Only through fighting without sleeping was he able to be promoted from the seventh rank to the eighth rank.

Chapter 1054 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(6)

He had just now met up with Boss, and unexpectedly rose two ranks in a row. This was simply like taking a flying car, extremely pleasurable.

The most pleasurable was, when he continuously rose two ranks, even his enemies were present.

Seeing their jealous appearance of nearly being driven mad, Beichen Ying frankly felt— Pleasurable, really pleasurable!

“Hahaha, so little? Jealous ah?” Beichen Ying rolled up his sleeves, put his hands on his hips and raised his chin, immensely proud of himself.

The four people over there all looked at him in a despising manner.

Wasn't it just being promoted two levels in a row? Worth bragging? Was it worth bragging?

Only, thinking about it..... really was damned envious!

Li Yaoyao discovered that she had regained her freedom of movement and coldly smiled: “Third Senior Brother is in a good mood, we were all busily searching in a frenzy, yet you guys are here playing chess?”

Normally, when these words were said, ordinary people would blush right? Having been caught goofing off oh.

But, who was Nangong Liuyun and them ah? How could they be stumped by a sentence from Li Yaoyao?

Zi Yan repeatedly sneered: “If you guys found the entrance, you guys could also sit down to wait by playing chess ah, who told you guys not to find it?”

“You!” Li Yaoyao's refined eyes wrinkled tightly.

Su Luo smiled slightly: “Zi Yan, your words are a little off, if Miss Li had found the entrance, whether they would have waited for us would also be questionable.”

Li Yaoyao’s gloomy and cold gaze shot towards Su Luo: “You, such a sickly waste, why would there be a place for you to talk here?”

Li Yaoyao’s words immediately made the calm atmosphere into one with swords drawn and bows bent.

“Who’s the waste?” Su Luo coldly smiled without any concern.

“The waste naturally is talking about you!” Li Yaoyao burst into loud laughter.

It had to be said, after cursing out Su Luo, that anger in her heart was immediately smoothed out a lot.

A sly sneer flashed across Su Luo’s face: “So, as it turned out, it’s you, this waste, talking about this Miss, say some more, what else was said.”

The little divine dragon stood on Su Luo’s left shoulder and she carried the soft Nine-tailed Spirit Fox in her arms, looking at Li Yaoyao with a ghost of a smile.

Li Yaoyao was immediately at a loss for words.

Only now did she return to her senses, she was cursing someone else and instead cursed herself.

This was really.....

“Su Luo, you slut!” Li Yaoyao was so angry that she almost stamped her feet.

However, after she uttered this curse out loud, an afterimage flashed from Su Luo’s shoulder.

The little divine dragon exploded towards Li Yaoyao like electricity!

“Bang!”

A swollen palm print appeared on Li Yaoyao’s face, clearly traces left by being slapped.

And what’s even more tragic was that the little divine dragon directly sent Li Yaoyao flying with one slap!

Li Yaoyao was still in a frightened state when she was held up by Situ Ming.

The surroundings became quiet.

“Su Luo, you this——”

After the quiet, Li Yaoyao erupted into a snarl that frightened the heavens!

However, without waiting for her to say another curse, the little divine dragon that had already returned to Su Luo’s shoulder lifted up the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox and it tossed at Li Yaoyao.

And as for himself, he took this opportunity to drill into Su Luo’s arms, firmly occupying the position that originally belonged to him!

Seeing little master teasing that loathsome fox, he was so jealous, finally, he had reasonable grounds to send it away!

As for the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox that was thrown out.

The little master was just stroking its fur while it was comfortably sleeping. Then, out of nowhere, it was thrown out in the cold.

The small divine dragon used strength and the opportunity was very timely.

So, the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox had a hard time controlling its flight, that small, round and white as snow little body smashed very fiercely on Li Yaoyao’s face.

Li Yaoyao was smashed until she was dazed and had a dizzy spell.

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox glared at Li Yaoyao.

This hindrance was really annoying, falling into it nearly broke its lower back.

The small Nine-tailed Spirit Fox, panting with rage, stepped on Li Yaoyao’s face once, with a turn of its waist, it suddenly leapt towards Su Luo’s arm.

Not to mention how the two little spirit pets were striving for Su Luo’s favor, just speaking of Li Yaoyao’s side over here.

Chapter 1055 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(7)

Why would she dare to shout at Su Luo? Wasn't it because Su Luo's body was now seriously injured and she didn't have any strength?

But her family's two spirit pets, whichever one that comes out, could easily trample her.

This kind of discovery nearly made her go crazy.

Because of wrath, Li Yaoyao's body trembled non-stop, so intense as if she was stricken with malaria.

"Yaoyao, Yaoyao!" Situ Ming held her with deep concern.

Li Yaoyao's both hands were clenched tightly into fists, her fingernails sunk deep into her flesh.

Su Luo! Today's hatred, I, Li Yaoyao will repay many folds back to you in the future!

Li Yaoyao's eyes flickered with malicious rays of light, ferociously staring at Su Luo, like a viper hidden in the underbrush that could pounce at any time to give a mortal wound.

Su Luo carried the two little snow-colored balls in her arm. She was unperturbed and calm with a placid gaze, as if the matter just a moment ago never occurred.

Seeing this, Li Yaoyao was even more infuriated.

Nangong Liuyun's ruthless gaze swept over Li Yaoyao, he picked up Su Luo and softly said: "You should have played enough, let's all go in."

Should have played enough? So it turned out that Third Senior Brother

allowed Su Luo to play me?

After realizing this fact, Li Yaoyao's fists gave off snapping sounds.

Now, the sun was overhead, that just so happened to shine upon an ancient tree.

Under the shade of this tree was a sparkling transparent halo.

As it turned out, Nangong Liuyun was playing chess here for the purpose of waiting for the afternoon sun to shine on this teleportation point.

Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo and stood in the center of that halo. In the blink of an eye, his entire person disappeared.

This party of people was gradually delivered into the Nine Different Palace Halls.

When Luo Dieyi passed in front of Li Yaoyao, she suddenly turned her head around and sneeringly shook her head: "Can you clearly see it now? You had always been in this relationship alone, showering affection on an uninterested party. It's all your own wishful thinking, my elder female cousin."

Having finished speaking, Luo Dieyi had already arrived in front of the halo. In a flash, she was transferred in.

Li Yaoyao was infuriated until her complexion became ashen, she continuously took coarse and heavy breaths.

Infuriated to death, infuriated to death, infuriated to death!!!

Situ Ming finally stopped in front of Li Yaoyao, steadily looking at her with eyes filled with deep love: "Yaoyao, give up, give it up, okay?"

"No! Absolutely not!" Li Yaoyao shrieked, hatefully glaring at Situ Ming: "What is your meaning? You think Third Senior Brother doesn't want me, then you can take advantage of the void to enter? You must be dreaming!"

Finished talking, Li Yaoyao quickly walked into the halo and was transferred in.

It was as if Situ Ming's face had been ruthlessly slapped, with an area flushed red.

His kindness, unexpectedly, was returned with this kind of treatment? All these things he did, in the end, did it have any meaning?

No matter what each of them chose, they ultimately still came to the Nine Different Palace Halls.

Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo, wrapping her entire person in the wide fox fur, protecting her completely.

When others exited the teleportation area, each and every one of them was dizzy, nearly unable to stand.

However, Su Luo was completely unaffected by this.

All around, there was a dense mist overflowing with spirit energy, as if they had arrived in the world of immortals.

Before them stood a palace hall made of white jade, towering and erect, subdued but still luxurious.

At a rough count, it just so happened to have nine floors.

So it turned out that this was the legendary life-and-death challenge ——Nine Different Palace Halls.

Numerous treasures were inside the Nine Different Palace Halls, as long as one crossed the appropriate hurdle, there would be a corresponding reward.

“Now, you guys have already entered the Nine Different Palace Halls’ range.” A loud and clear dignified voice rang out beside everyone’s ears.

This voice was like a clap of thunder from a clear sky, shaking everyone on the spot.

This was the voice of the Nine Different Palace Halls’ owner.

“The Nine Different Palace Halls’ assignments are divided into average grade, difficult grade, elite grade, and death grade, the four types of options. The reward for the average grade is the lowest, the reward for the death grade is most abundant. Children, riches and honor can only be sought among danger, the death grade’s spirit treasures are waiting at your own whims ah.”

Chapter 1056 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(8)

This segment of speech carried a trace of bewitching quality, as if lobbying at all costs for the challenger to select the death grade.

Just when this segment of speech came out, ‘swoosh, swoosh, swoosh’, four pieces of protruding jasper jade appeared from the wall.

Average grade, difficult grade, elite grade and death grade, these four options.

Nangong Liuyun’s eyes narrowed slightly, they were profoundly mysterious.

Luo Haochen coldly smiled: “Death grade? It’s not like we are fools, how could we possibly select the death grade.”

Luo Dieyi also smilingly said: “Average grade is too ordinary, we ought to choose the difficult grade.”

Situ Ming and Li Yaoyao still hadn’t been transferred in, so they abstained from voting.

Nangong Liuyun’s deep eyes swept over them once, his pupils were enchanting, enigmatic and demonically charming.

An afterimage flashed by, he had already arrived in front of that dark green, fourth chunk of jasper jade.

Common grade, difficult grade, elite grade and death grade.

Arranged from left to right.

Nangong Liuyun’s clear slender finger, without the slightest hesitation, pressed on the death grade option.

“Hahahahaha.....Finally, someone chose the death grade, hahaha——”

A burst of domineering wild laughter rang out beside everyone’s ears. Stinging their eardrums, making it feel extremely painful.

Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen simply became rooted to the spot, staring blankly. They completely didn’t know how they should react.

“Bang——”

The vermilion red palace hall gates slowly opened. Inside it was enveloped in a thick fog, no one was able to see clearly.

“Oh, I forgot to say, there are only two situations where you can exist the death grade. One, death, two, clearing the challenge. It is impossible to withdraw midway.”

This full of domineering voice carried a wisp of urgency and its laughter was strange.

Cannot withdraw midway? One, death, two, clearing the challenge? There were only these two options?

Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming had just come in when they heard this grievous news, they immediately stood rigidly to the spot!

That berserk voice seemed to feel that it still hadn’t shocked them enough, it once again, ‘haha’, howled with laughter: “Go in, my children, hope you guys can live till the end. For so many years, there was only one group that cleared the death grade oh, hahahahaha——”

The sound lingered on, refusing to stop.

It seemed as if a long time had passed before this extremely painful voice that shook people’s ears gradually faded.

Luo Haochen was the first one to return to his senses, he glared at Nangong Liuyun: “Why did you select death grade? You want to kill us all?!”

Wisps of blood flashed in the depths of Luo Haochen’s eyes, it could clearly be seen that his anger had already reached the extreme point.

It was not only Luo Haochen, these several people were all gazing at Nangong

Liuyun in shock, all of them were waiting for his explanation.

Nangong Liuyun's eyes wrinkled slightly, just when everyone thought he would fling his sleeves and leave, he unhurriedly opened his mouth.

“Death grade, the probability of getting the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort is one hundred percent.”

His voice was indifferent, as if he was talking about something as simple as eating and drinking water.

Everyone stared blankly.

However, Li Yaoyao took the lead to first return to her senses. Her eyes nearly shot out flames: “Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort, you, because of a little higher probability, are sending us all to our deaths?!”

Situ Ming was clearly also very angry: “Third Junior Brother, you doing this, isn't it too selfish and too excessive! For so many years, I mistook you!”

Nangong Liuyun's three thousand black hair was wind-born and danced softly and wantonly. His glowing white complexion was brash and chilly, demonically charming and indolent.

“Selfish? Excessive?” Nangong Liuyun's eyes were like obsidian, resplendent as jade. He cast a sidelong glance at Situ Ming, his smile was touching like the summer flower, “This is the real me oh, you didn't mistakenly recognize someone else.”

Situ Ming had a breath stifled in his throat, not going up nor down, nearly causing him to breathe his last.

Su Luo almost uttered her laughter out loud.

Even if the whole world was opposed, her Nangong still was absolutely unrestrained, doing whatever he pleased.

She really liked this kind of brash and overbearing manner of his.

Chapter 1057 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(9)

It was merely the death grade, really.....

Su Luo shook her head and gave Zi Yan and Beichen Ying an apologetic look.

It was her injury that implicated them.

Beichen Ying happily smiled: “With Second Brother here, what matters are impossible? Sister-in-law, you say, am I right?”

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth contained a smile as she nodded her head.

Indeed, Nangong Liuyun was like that tall and straight mountain peak. He gave people a steady sense of security and complete confidence.

Zi Yan was even more exhilarated: “I heard the death grade is full of spirit treasures, at that time, you guys better not snatch it from me.”

“Things that can be snatched must be snatched!” Beichen Ying said in a deadpan manner.

“What did you say? You dare to snatch it from this old woman? Stand still!” Zi Yan and Beichen Ying laughingly and noisily play fought into a group.

Just when the people behind them still hadn’t returned to their senses, Su Luo’s party of people had already entered those gates.

What’s to be done?

Huge question marks appeared above the foreheads of the four people left behind.

“That’s the death grade ah, you guys really dare to enter?” Luo Dieyi stared incredulously at Li Yaoyao.

“Su Luo, that slut, can enter even injured to that degree, why can’t I? Second Senior Brother, let us go in!” Li Yaoyao pulled Situ Ming along and entered with quick steps.

Seeing that those gates were about to close, Luo Dieyi gazed at Luo Haochen, pleading for help.

A thread of cold light finally flashed through Luo Haochen’s eyes: “They can enter, we can also go.”

He gently stroked the ring on his finger, that place had his deepest trump cards.

Luo Dieyi looked at that bronze ring on his finger, then nodded her head: “For the spirit treasures, we’ll enter!”

As a result, before the palace gates closed, the Luo siblings also grandiosely entered this Nine Different Palace Halls.

Nine Different Palace Halls, nine floors high, with nine challenges to pass.

They had just entered the first floor.

Everyone only felt things go blank for a second before their eyes, the setting of their surroundings had already changed into the extreme icy north with snowflakes floating about.

The cold wind was biting cold and pierced to the bones.

Everyone had just entered, still hadn’t stood firm, still hadn’t understand everything, before they heard that wild tyrannical voice resounding beside their ears.

“Resist the wind blades for a quarter of an hour, begin.”

The voice had barely faded before the world suddenly changed color!

They were given no time to prepare when countless wind blades shot towards them from all directions.

Endless cold air constantly diffused into the air, so deeply cold that it made everyone feel as if they were staying in hell.

A countless number of wind blades with astonishing might, moreover, they

completely lacked any patterns of attack.

Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo on his back, protecting her under the fox fur coat, safely and securely, she didn't suffer the slightest injury.

Now, the area around his body seemed to be caged in a transparent protective cover, no matter how ferocious the wind blades were, they were all blocked at a distance of three meters away.

Compared to Su Luo's relaxedness, the other six people all ate a lot of suffering.

The appearance of the wind blades were random. Front and back, left and right, up and down, no matter what direction, they were there.

Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming were a group.

Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen were a group.

Beichen Ying and Zi Yan were a group.

They were all back-to-back with their partner, the swords in their hands flickering with afterimages, sounds of the clank of metal never stopped.

"Ah!" Suddenly, Li Yaoyao cried out in alarm.

So, it turned out that she couldn't block it, a wind blade grazed her arm in passing. Suddenly, blood dyed her arm red.

Heartache immediately appeared in Situ Ming's eyes.

"Yaoyao, are you okay?" Situ Ming nervously asked!

He had no time to spare, if he stopped the wind blades would surely injure Li Yaoyao.

"It hurts so much....." Li Yaoyao's tears bubbled up, weepingly wanting to sob.

Her gaze streaked across, inadvertently, she saw Su Luo that was leisurely lying on Nangong Liuyun's back—— For a moment, Li Yaoyao's tears streamed down with a 'swoosh' sound.

Comparing people to people really could infuriate one to death!

Chapter 1058 – Nine Different Palace Halls

(10)

However, no matter how angry Li Yaoyao got, Su Luo still leisurely reclined on Nangong Liuyun's warm broad back.

When the countless number of wind blades flew near Su Luo's body, they were smashed into fine powder.

Li Yaoyao nearly went insane from jealousy.

"Be careful!" When Li Yaoyao was distracted, Situ Ming flew over and protected her in his arms.

"Puff—"

A wind blade hit his back with a piercing blow.

"Hiss—"

Situ Ming sucked in a cold breath of air.

This wind blade was simply too strange, momentarily, blood would violently rush out from the skin that was hit with such a piercing blow.

"Concentrate your mind, stop looking around randomly!" While Situ Ming bellowed, he also helped Li Yaoyao block the wind blades.

Li Yaoyao reluctantly forced down her jealous fire, brandishing the double-edged sword in her hand and unceasingly cursed them not to pass this challenge.

Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen concentrated their minds on blocking the wind blades, without being distracted in the least.

Beichen Ying and Zi Yan were also completely concentrated on responding.

For Beichen Ying, this time, the wind blades were just perfect for tempering himself during actual combat.

Seeing that the wind blades were about to arrive, he didn't destroy it with one sword swing. Rather, he continuously calculated while he took continuous steps to leap in and out in order to obtain the most exquisite footwork.

For him, this time's wind blades weren't just to endure for a quarter of an hour. Rather, he wanted to cultivate his footwork using the attack at this time.

Zi Yan obvious understood his plans at a glance, as a result, she used all her strength to coordinate with his actions.

Even near the end, she practically left Beichen Ying's side, letting him stay alone among the wind blades that were coming from all directions.

The bloody double-edged sword in Beichen Ying's hand moved.

His double-edged sword's speed rapidly soared to a certain degree, to the extent that the air around him gave off a vibrating sound.

After every passing of the double-edged sword, more than ten wind blades would be blocked.

This kind of accurate grasp of speed, a lot of people had no hope of catching up.

From the beginning, where a sword swing would block more than ten wind blades, till later, when Beichen Ying's double-edged sword streaked across, several tens of wind blades would fall down with pitter-patter sounds.

"Slice——"

The final storm of wind blades terminated.

Beichen Ying still wanted to continue.

"Why did it stop?" Beichen Ying was anxious to the point of grabbing his ear and scratching his cheek.

He had just practiced to the crucial point, an insight had flashed past and he nearly caught it, why did the wind blades cease?

Beichen Ying sighed, alas, he was somewhat dissatisfied.

Li Yaoyao and Luo Dieyi's group glared at him.

They all wished for the wind blades to end a bit earlier and for that quarter of

an hour to come a bit earlier. But this man, unexpectedly, had been disdainful that there were too few wind blades?

However, after he retracted his sword, Beichen Ying's aura faintly had a touch of change.

If one was to say, before, he was showy and elegant. Then the him right now, actually gave people a feeling that he was showing off his ability.

Like an exceptional treasured sword that wasn't sheathed.

Li Yaoyao wanted to complain for a few sentences, yet ultimately, she shut her mouth and didn't say anything.

Just at this moment, with a 'swoosh' sound a huge screen unexpectedly appeared in front of everyone.

On the screen, four turntables were rotating nonstop.

Under the turntables were the groups' names.

The first group, Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo.

The second group, Beichen Ying and Zi Yan.

The third group, Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming.

The fourth group, Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen.

Don't know how this Nine Different Palaces knew their names, but at present, their names really did appear under the turntables.

The very first one to stop was the fourth group.

"Eighty points."

Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen's score was eighty points.

The third group's turntable stopped immediately afterwards.

Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming got: "Seventy points."

Li Yaoyao's brows knotted tightly!

She never thought that with her and Second Senior Brother acting together, they would actually lose to the Luo Dieyi siblings. This simply was against all reason.

Chapter 1059 – White Jade Bridge (1)

Don't know on what basis the owner of this Nine Different Palace Halls used to calculate the scores.

At this moment, everyone's gaze all stared fixedly on that screen with a turntable that was rolling continuously.

Because of it, Li Yoayao was even more nervous.

Because this score directly impacted who got the prize for breaking through the challenge this time.

Finally, the second turntable stopped.

“Seventy-five points.”

Beichen Ying and Zi Yan's group score, unexpectedly, was only seventy-five points.

“Is there a mistake, why is it only seventy five points!” Zi Yan glared, panting with rage.

She and Little Shadow's cooperation already was very tight, ok? Unexpectedly, they scored lower than Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen, how could this let her endure having been strongly cheering for victory in her heart?

Just at this moment, the first turntable had also stopped.

Finally, the cursor pointed towards—

“Fifty points.”

“Pfft!” Seeing this result, the group of people were completely dumbstruck.

There was ecstasy in Li Yaoyao's eyes, she wished she could jump up immediately.

Wahahahaha! Su Luo, this little slut, you actually have such a day as today! Her group only had fifty points!

Among the four small groups, they were last ah, last.

Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen were also dumbstruck.

Happiness came too quickly and too sudden, they practically had no time to react.

Even if you killed them, they still wouldn't dare to believe they were able to beat Nangong Liuyun.

However, reality was so clearly arranged before their eyes.

"This is impossible!" Zi Yan shrieked, "How is this possible?"

Nangong Liuyun could actually lose?

Beichen Ying, with his mouth gaping wide open, looked at the number on the turntable with disbelief. Then, he looked at Nangong Liuyun again with an incredulous expression.

Nangong Liuyun's expression was the same as before, he stood there indifferently, the wind blowing up his clothing, making him seem like an immortal.

His appearance on the surface was like this, but in his heart, he was cursing with all his strength!

How did the f*cktard calculate this in the end ah? Why was it only fifty points? Not only were they not first, they were even last.

No wonder they were astonished, when has he, Nangong Liuyun, ever been last in his life?

Su Luo's brows were almost tied into a knot.

"This isn't because it calculated only yours?" She muttered.

"It must have been." Nangong Liuyun gloomily nodded.

Fine, it was only the first challenge, there were still eight challenges to come. If all the challenges were like this, then what was the point of challenging it?

His effort only counted towards his score, Luo Luo's score didn't have a bit of value.....

Even if he got full marks in every challenge, it was still only fifty points ah.

Just when Nangong Liuyun's brows were knotted from being at a loss, that familiar voice once again appeared.

"The first challenge, the winners are Luo Haochen and Luo Dieyi."

The voice had barely faded when a light beam shot down from the sky and wrapped around the Luo siblings.

The Luo siblings only felt this light was warm like the spring, as if they were bathing in the spring breeze. All the pores of their bodies opened up, as if they had returned to their mother's bosom.

The light beam didn't scatter for a long time, everyone's saliva was about to flow down from envy.

Seeing the injuries on the two people's bodies heal with a speed visible to the naked eye, Li Yaoyao was so jealous that she almost went insane.

She shifted forward two steps and wanted to touch a bit of it.

However, Li Yaoyao's body had just touched the edge of the light beam.

Suddenly, she only felt a huge vigorous attack come.

Immediately, it sent her entire person flying away!

If Situ Ming hadn't helped at the crucial moment, using his body as sacrifice to protect Li Yaoyao in his arms, she right now would already have been smashed into pieces.

Zi Yan saw this and put her hands on her hips, and with 'haha' sounds, started to howl with laughter. She hammered the ground while she laughed, laughing till tears came out.

"Li Yaoyao.....Hahaha.....Too damn funny..... The Jade Lake's fairy that is spotless, noble and cannot be profaned.....You also have today ah..... Hahaha....."

Chapter 1060 – White Jade Bridge (2)

Su Luo pursed her lips and smiled, as her gaze fell on Li Yaoyao's body.

Li Yaoyao's conduct and deeds just now were really somewhat small-minded, with a loud bang, the image she had maintained from before collapsed completely.

Su Luo blushed in shame at having this kind of rival in love.

Li Yaoyao blushed while facing the dry ground, then she very fiercely glared at Su Luo and Zi Yan. Situ Ming then helped her stand up.

Situ Ming's complexion was somewhat complicated, he took out a Congealing Pill for Li Yaoyao to take.

Before the Rebirth of Flesh Pills appeared, the Congealing Pills were the best healing medicine.

Li Yaoyao, in one mouthful, swallowed the pill.

As if she also felt her actions were ill-founded, she silently stood behind Situ Ming's body, not saying a word. Her face seemed to be enveloped in frost, cold like icy snow.

Those milky white rays of light that enveloped the Luo siblings gradually left and disappeared.

At the next glance, everyone felt that these two siblings were somewhat different from before.

The wounds they received from being chased to be killed by the Snow Lions from before had actually all been healed. The wounds didn't even leave a scar.

What astonished people the most was, their strength also increased a level.

Luo Haochen was promoted to the peak of the eighth rank and Luo Dieyi was

also promoted to the peak of the seventh rank.

If you must know, before, these two people were experts due to heaps of medicine, it was very difficult for them to be promoted.

However, no one had expected that the effects from this milky white light beam would be so good!

“Hahaha.....Promoted a level, was the first challenge’s benefits, what the next challenge’s benefits are, please look forward to it. Hahaha!”

In mid-air, that madly laughing voice was continuous and endless, jolting people’s eardrums until it hurt.

At this moment, Li Yaoyao almost went insane from jealousy, she bit down tightly on her lower lip. She sinisterly stared at those two siblings.

“The next challenge, we have to strive for first place.” Situ Ming saw Li Yaoyao was jealous and envious to this degree, so he said this in a low voice besides her ear.

“It’s not strive for, it’s a must win!” Li Yaoyao made a fist.

Worthy of being death grade’s challenge, just the first challenge and the reward was this rich. Heaven knows what could come later.

Not long after, everyone only felt the rays of light flash.

When their sights settled, they had already been delivered into a plaza.

The plaza’s floor was covered in white jade, sparkling and pure, flickering with spiritual energy. It was simply incredibly extravagant.

Everyone stood blankly in place, not knowing which direction the road ahead was.

Because this plaza seemed vast and endless that you couldn’t glimpse the end.

All around were completely covered with white jade that was as white as snow.

Li Yaoyao and Luo Dieyi’s group looked at each other in dismay.

If they had chosen average grade or difficult grade, they could still consult

their predecessors' experiences as a reference. However, not a bit of the previous experiences were of use for the death grade.

Nangong Liuyun's tall body was wrapped inside a wide fox fur.

Su Luo stood at his side with a quiet and content expression. Her face was full of a tranquil and calm smile.

Originally, Su Luo also didn't know which direction to go, but the little divine dragon in her arms pointed to the northwest direction and informed her that the aura was different over there.

Just at this moment, that madly laughing and tyrannical voice could be heard again coming from the sky: "Hahaha, this second challenge, you guys only have a day's time. If you guys can't pass it in a day's time, then wait to be made into mincemeat, hahahahaha——"

That mad guy's unrestrained laughter made people's hearts angry, yet they were powerless.

"Second Brother, what are we to do next?" Beichen Ying took a glance at Su Luo and asked in a low voice.

At present, they hadn't even found the road yet and they still had to successfully pass the challenge in a day, this problem wasn't just ordinarily difficult.

"Finding the road is not difficult." Nangong Liuyun frowned slightly.

The difficulty was to get him and Luo'er to challenge it together.

Chapter 1061 – White Jade Bridge (3)

If they calculated just based on his scores alone, then even if they charged this to the end, they still wouldn't be able to obtain anything.

Because he faintly thought that these scores...in the end, would be tallied up to get a total score.

Seeing Su Luo weakly leaning against his side, Nangong Liuyun caressed her hair lovingly in a spoiling manner.

No matter what, he must challenge and break through this Nine Different Palace Halls. Moreover, he had to get first place.

Nangong Liuyun supported Su Luo and took the lead to walk in the northwest direction. However, his brows still hadn't smoothed out.

With his eyesight, he naturally sensed the different aura and fluctuations in the northwest.

The party walked for approximately one hour, finally, they had reached the end of the white jade covered plaza.

No one had expected that at the end of the white jade covered plaza, there would actually be a furious sea with turbulent waves.

Apart from this, there was just a white jade bridge that seemed to be connected to the watchtower on the ninth layer of heaven.

This white jade bridge was shaped like an arch, but everyone's eyesight could only see up to half of the arch.

They could only see one side of it soaring to the sky, connected to the watchtower in the ninth layer of heaven.

Underneath the white jade bridge was the furious flames of the wild waves.

While in its surroundings, were many white clouds floating carelessly back and forth.

“This bridge... I’m afraid it goes on for more than five hundred kilometers, right?”

Everyone was shaken by this scene. After quite a while, Beichen Ying was finally able to utter this out loud.

Such a decrepit condition and imposing scene, even he, who had seen the world before, was also somewhat flabbergasted.

“This is only the second challenge.” Nangong Liuyun indifferently looked far into the distance.

“That’s right, it’s still only the second challenge.” Beichen Ying repeated this line.

However, the second challenge was already this shocking. There were still seven hurdles after this!

Beichen Ying felt that for them to successfully break through the challenges unscathed, it was absolutely more difficult than ascending to the heavens.

“The long swinging white jade bridge, pairs for the nine layers of heaven.”

On that white jade bridge’s wall, these scarlet words came faintly into view.

“The long swinging white jade bridge, pairs for the nine layers of heaven. What does it mean?” Luo Dieyi asked in puzzlement.

Li Yaoyao gazed into the distant horizon and, after a quite a while, said, “According to what was written in the family records, in the average grade trials, this white jade bridge was the ninth challenge.

When this was said, everyone froze.

The final challenge in the average grade, now, was the second challenge for them? This death grade was truly... made them want to cry but lacking the tears.

Li Yaoyao shot a glance with hidden bitterness at Nangong Liuyun and continued to explain, “The long swinging white jade bridge, pairs for the nine

layers of heaven.' means that every time, only two people can be on this white jade bridge. Only after waiting for these two people to finish crossing the white jade bridge, then, can the two people behind go to challenge this trial. Otherwise, all four people will die ten times out of ten with no chance at life!"

Hearing this, everyone was silent.

"Additionally, to challenge this white jade bridge, there will only be two results. One, successfully rushed through, it'll be to everyone's delight and satisfaction. The second, will be to fail and immediately die. There's absolutely no third road," Beichen Ying added.

His family's records, also had bits and pieces of it written down.

"Could it be that we can't even retreat?" Luo Dieyi cried out in alarm.

"We won't be able to. The moment we step onto this white jade bridge, there won't be a return road. You can only move forward. You can't look back." Beichen Ying's gaze burned. "If someone regrets this, they could wait in this plaza of white jade. If we successfully break through, then, when the time comes, naturally, you'll be able to leave. If we fail the challenge, then everyone will die here together."

The content of those words made everyone go silent.

Li Yaoyao shot Su Luo a glance and scoffed coldly, "Based on your body's current condition, you certainly won't be able to cross this bridge. You should just stay here and wait."

Chapter 1062 – White Jade Bridge (4)

Su Luo smiled faintly. She threw a glance with a smile which wasn't a smile at her: "Don't need to trouble the Jade Lake's fairy to labor over it. Nangong Liuyun will definitely help me cross the bridge."

Su Luo naturally knew what words would hit Li Yaoyao the hardest.

When Li Yaoyao heard these words, the hands by her side clenched tightly into fists, with an irritated expression, she glared at Su Luo: "Then we'll wait and see!"

"En, we will have to wait and see." Su Luo said with a smile.

After she finished saying this sentence, Su Luo covered her lips, and lightly coughed twice, as if she was spent.

Nangong Liuyun's heart ached seeing her like this and he transferred more spirit energy to her. With great difficulty, he had managed to nurse her body back to health by a little bit.

"Miss Li, just taking care of yourself will be fine." Nangong Liuyun swept an annoyed glance at Li Yaoyao.

Li Yaoyao had a breath stifled in her throat, she nearly suffocated from holding it back.

If other people had said this, Li Yaoyao wouldn't have cared. But the person who said this just so happened to be her Third Senior Brother, whom she cared about the most.

Heaven knows that his every word and action, every expression, were enough to destroy her.

Right now, he was staring at her with a face full of annoyance...

Li Yaoyao tightly bit down on her lower lip, almost drawing blood.

Situ Ming wanted to say something, but the oppressive power of an expert coming from Nangong Liuyun's body was truly too strong. So much pressure, that he didn't dare budge.

Nangong Liuyun humphed heavily, and did not feel like paying more attention to Li Yaoyao again.

His attention was all placed onto the white jade bridge.

Beichen Ying stood by Nangong Liuyun's side, looking at the white jade bridge. His expression was serious and grave: "The white jade bridge is endlessly long. Everywhere, there is danger on it, impossible to defend effectively against it."

Nangong Liuyun calmly stood in place for a long time. His lanky body was tall and straight, just like a pine tree.

He stood with hands behind his back, immediately giving him a respectable and extraordinary temperament which imposed fear onto others.

He heard Beichen Ying talk endlessly without getting to the point and didn't say anything. He had an indifferent and cold expression in his eyes.

"Who will go first and who will go last?" Beichen Ying finally asked.

Nangong Liuyun's pair of long and narrow, beautiful eyes were deep and unfathomable.

"You guys go first." Nangong Liuyun's dark red lips slowly hooked into a smile, and his eyes were as bright, clear and dazzling as crystal stones.

Beicheng Ying had always looked to Nangong Liuyun as the leader. Since Nangong had said so, he would naturally comply.

"Alright. The two of us will go first. Then what about you two?" Beichen Ying glanced at Su Luo with worry.

Nangong Liuyun possessed remarkable abilities. How could this white jade bridge be a problem for him? The only thing he was worried about was Su Luo.

"You don't need to worry, I have my plans." Nangong Liuyun's beautiful eyes

were handsome like bright stars, and profoundly mysterious.

Beichen Ying said something to Zi Yan, then the two of them prepared to set foot onto the white jade bridge.

“Wait a minute!” Luo Haochen, who had been silent all this time, suddenly called out.

“What? You guys want to be the first to cross?” Beichen Ying raised his eyebrows with a smile that wasn’t quite a smile.

“You really guessed right. We want to be the first to cross. Elder Brother Beichen, is it possible for you to let us?” Luo Haochen smiled from ear to ear as he walked to in front of the Beichen Ying pair.

Beichen Ying frowned.

There were both dangers and favorable circumstances involved with being the first to cross the white jade bridge.

Because the first to cross would have no experience and serve as a sacrificial reference. It could be said they were like a probing stone.

If they were the first to pass, there naturally would be many benefits. Although they didn’t know the grading criteria, but being the first across would be shown some consideration in points, okay.

Luo Haochen, who had already gotten one round of benefits, naturally wouldn’t let this go.

Only he and Luo Dieyi knew just how much of a defiance of nature were the benefits of the light beam.

Those kinds of benefits were worth them using their lives to risk it all for.

“You guys are sure you want to be the first to cross?” Beichen Ying had both his hands crossed behind his back. His lanky body stood tall and straight where he was.

His brows knitted slightly, clearly not very happy.

“I hope Brother Beichen will help.” Luo Haochen had a firm expression on his face, not allowing for refusal.

Chapter 1063 – White Jade Bridge (5)

If Beichen Ying refused, there was a high probability that Luo Haochen would not retreat, to the extent of starting a big fight.

Out of the corner of his eyes, Beichen Ying took a glance at Nangong Liuyun. Soon after, he smiled faintly: “Since Brother Luo wants to be the first to cross, then go ahead and be the first to cross. We don’t have any objections.”

Finished speaking, he pulled Zi Yan and automatically conceded by moving aside.

Beichen Ying seemed to be the most happy-go-lucky, but he usually was the most unlikely to back down. Today, if it wasn’t because Nangong nodded, regardless of what was said, he simply wouldn’t back down.

Seeing Beichen Ying agree so easily, at first, Luo Haochen was excited, then he immediately looked at Beichen Ying with suspicion.

Seeing him like this, Zi Yan was itching to kick him!

“Are you going to cross or not? If you’re not crossing, then we’ll go!”

Being scolded with a finger pointed at his nose, the great Young Master Luo’s face immediately became black.

“Cross. Of course, we want to cross! Older Brother, let’s go! Hmph!” Luo Dieyi pulled at Luo Haochen, and the two of them directly walked to the side of the white jade bridge.

“The white jade bridge only allows two people to cross. Before we clear this trial, you guys are not allowed to come!” Luo Dieyi turned back and glared, telling them this in a stern voice.

For the moment, the scene was quiet and noiseless.

Su Luo's side naturally would not pay her any attention.

White jade bridge, tall and erect, reaching endlessly through the clouds.

At the start, they could still see the two people's figures, but very quickly, their figures were enveloped by the white clouds, unable to be seen again.

After two hours, there was still no sound of activity.

"Will they be able to cross? Will they be able to pass the trial?" Li Yaoyao stared, unable to take her eyes off the white jade bridge, while murmuring to herself.

"The strength of Luo Haochen and Luo Dieyi pair was originally the lowest among us, but after bathing in the white light of the first trial. It's now hard to gauge their strength. If they can't get across, then we..." would also find it very difficult.

Before Situ Ming could say these last few words, Li Yaoyao had already glared at him forcefully.

"Second Senior Brother! Our goal is the ninth challenge. How can this insignificant second challenge be a problem to us?" Li Yaoyao said boldly and confidently.

The ninth challenge's Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort... She wouldn't pass it up to someone else.

Even if she couldn't obtain it, she also definitely wouldn't let someone else get it.

Su Luo wanted to use that Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort to cure her serious injuries? She's dreaming!

Li Yaoyao made a firm resolution in her heart. Even if she died, she would absolutely not allow Su Luo to obtain that Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort.

"Howl——"

Suddenly, an angry howl came from the clouds above.

Everyone's expressions turned cold, and they stared earnestly and gravely at where the sound had come from.

However, that place, besides the thick fog-like layers of white clouds, nothing else could be seen.

Endless bellowing sounds reached their ears. Wave after wave of roars, as if there was an intense battle in progress.

Then, another stick of incense time had passed.

Suddenly, a black turntable appeared on the white jade bridge.

Everyone was very familiar with this turntable.

During the first challenge, the scores were shown on this turntable.

Since the turntable showed up, then that meant Luo Haochen's pair had broken through.

The black turntable rotated continuously at an astonishing speed without the slightest sign of stopping.

After approximately another stick of incense's time, the turntable slowly came to a stop.

The pointer was fixed on a spot.

"Forty points?" Li Yaoyao shouted loudly in surprise and covered up her lips in disbelief.

Wasn't this score too low? It was merely forty points?

Not only Li Yaoyao, but Beichen Ying and Zi Yan's brows were knitted as well.

Luo Haochen's strength wasn't considered weak, and he cooperated very well with Luo Dieyi. They could see this during the first challenge.

They had gotten first place for the first challenge, yet they had only gotten forty points in this trial?

Then what about the rest of them? How many points could they get?

For a moment, everyone's expressions was blank.

Chapter 1064 – White Jade Bridge (6)

“Who goes first for the second trial?” Nangong Liuyun’s eyes were cold and detached as ice, without a trace of warmth.

Now, a number of hours had already passed, but there were still three groups who hadn’t crossed yet.

“We’ll cross first,” Beichen Ying and Zi Yan spoke in unison.

Li Yaoyao wanted to say something but hesitated.

“Otherwise, you guys can cross first?” Beichen Ying smiled maliciously.

“Not necessary!” Li Yaoyao humphed coldly.

She watched Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo’s manner of nestling against each other, in her eyes, the jealousy bordered on madness.

A malicious thought suddenly emerged from her heart.

Before, the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls had said that if four people were to step on the white jade bridge at the same time, then what awaited these four people was indiscriminate destruction.

Perhaps, in this life and in this world, she would only have this chance to die together with her Third Senior Brother.

Li Yaoyao’s eyes flickered with a faint poisonous light.

“Situ Ming, you don’t have any objections right?” Beichen Ying asked again.

On the surface, Situ Ming was smiling: “Whatever Yaoyao said counts.”

He showed clearly that everything was up to Li Yaoyao.

Beichen Ying completely disapproved of Situ Ming’s conduct and deeds.

Considering their past friendship, Beichen Ying could not help but give him a

warning: “Brother Situ, taking a no complaints stance may not necessarily conclude with what the gentleman desires.”

Situ Ming glanced at Li Yaoyao with a tranquil and calm expression but his position was firm: “Regardless of the conclusion, I will endure the hardship gladly. Brother Beichen doesn’t need to persuade me more.”

What a stupid and pitiful man! This was the verdict Beichen Ying gave to Situ Ming.

How Li Yaoyao conducted herself, everyone with eyes could see it. Even Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen had already seen her true colors. Only Situ Ming was still as infatuated as before.

Perhaps it wasn’t because he couldn’t see clearly, but that he wasn’t willing to see her so clearly.

Since matters were already like this, Beichen Ying also didn’t feel like wasting more words with him.

“Beichen Ying, you’re meddling too much in other people’s business. We want to be the last group to go.” Li Yaoyao humphed coldly.

Although Beichen Ying’s words were vague, but did he think she was a fool? With the hints being so obvious, thinking she wouldn’t understand it?

“The last group?” Beichen Ying’s footsteps stopped and turned around.

He faintly felt that there was something really fishy about letting Li Yaoyao’s group be the last to cross. However, what was fishy about it, he couldn’t say.

Beichen Ying shot a worried glance at Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun’s expression was cold and detached, but spoke in a manner of making the final decision, “Situ Ming will be the third group to go.”

It was to the extent that he didn’t even feel like mentioning the three characters ‘Li Yaoyao’.

“Third Senior Brother...” Li Yaoyao stomped her feet in anger!

Although she might not really step onto the bridge and attempt suicide when Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun were on the white jade bridge. But Third Senior

Brother...

“I can’t possibly expose my back to people I can’t trust.” Nangong Liuyun stopped in his tracks, and after he finished saying this, in a cold and detached manner, he returned to Su Luo’s side.

People he can’t trust...

Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming’s complexions both froze.

Beichen Ying laughed happily: “Li Yaoyao, put away all your devilish plans. How can you be Nangong Liuyun’s opponent.”

Finished speaking, Beichen Ying and Zi Yan, both in high spirits, stepped onto the white jade bridge.

The two people’s figures gradually moved further away, eventually disappearing into the thick fog of white clouds.

Because they were her friends, this time, Su Luo strained her ears to hear. Her expression was also somewhat serious and grave.

“Don’t worry. Beichen Ying and Zi Yan’s strengths are still passable. If Luo Haochen can pass, they definitely can pass too.”

“This I know, however, as always, I can’t avoid being worried.” Su Luo leaned against his shoulder, with her gaze unblinkingly still watching that long, drawn-out white jade bridge, “Very quickly, it’ll be our turn soon.”

Chapter 1065 – White Jade Bridge (7)

“Girl, you don’t need to worry. The road is still very long.” Nangong Liuyun slowly said to console her while stroking her soft hair.

“With you here, I don’t need to worry.” Su Luo smilingly looked at him.

Nangong Liuyun left the imprint of a kiss on her forehead.

The warm atmosphere between the two people was full of tender feelings.

Li Yaoyao scoffed heavily, “I’ll just see how many points you guys will get!”

Su Luo continued talking with Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun laughed as he listened, as if what she said was very amusing.

Li Yaoyao stood there for quite a while, but no one paid any attention to her.

Those two people were simply ignoring her, treating her as though she didn’t exist!

Thinking up to here, Li Yaoyao almost exploded.

Situ Ming saw that the atmosphere wasn’t quite right and hurriedly pulled Li Yaoyao away.

Nangong Liuyun showed clearly that he didn’t like Yaoyao. He also clearly showed that Su Luo was a precious treasure to him. If Yaoyao really got into a quarrel with Su Luo, it was clear to see who would eat the loss.

Situ Ming was also puzzled ah....

The originally fairy-like, pure, cold and noble Jade Lake’s fairy, why was it that now, had unexpectedly become... become...

Those two words, Situ Ming still didn’t have the courage to say them.

Just at this moment, violent battle sounds could be heard coming from the

white jade bridge.

However, the battle sounds quickly settled down.

Su Luo immediately sat upright, gazing unblinkingly at the body of the bridge.

Sure enough, a turntable slowly appeared.

“Beichen Ying and Zi Yan made it across!” A smile appeared on Su Luo’s face.

However, regardless of the grades, at least the two of them were safe. This was the best news.

“I already said you were worrying groundlessly. Now, you should feel reassured.” Nangong Liuyun’s eyes contained a smile.

“Eh! Let’s take a look at how much they scored.”

While the two people talked, that turntable’s speed was slowing down.

“Thirty! thirty! thirty!” Li Yaoyao shouted loudly as she waved her fist around.

Su Luo frowned in annoyance: “How can it be thirty points? Is this person insane?”

Nangong Liuyun made a show of being very serious as he touched his chin: “I reckon she is insane. You should stay away from her. Be careful not to get infected.”

When Su Luo heard this, with a ‘pfft’, she laughed out loud.

“That person was originally your most beloved little junior sister. Now, you’re actually saying this about her?”

Nangong Liyun was unconcerned. The tips of his eyebrows raised slightly: “Isn’t it said that when one marries a wife, he forgets his mother? What does a little junior sister count for?”

“Oh, you really are...” Even Su Luo was speechless.

How could there be such a shameless person? Saying when one married a wife, he would forget his mother in such a pompous manner?

If his mother was really still alive, Su Luo felt she would have no face to see this elder again.

“I really am what?” Nangong Liuyun’s pair of enchanting and devilishly charming eyes winked, almost suffocating the person he was enticing.

Su Luo, with great difficulty, turned her gaze away: “I still haven’t married you yet. Talk less nonsense.”

“What? I’m already your man. You still don’t want to take responsibility?” The god-like His Highness Prince Jin, he opened his eyes wide in disbelief. That expression was extremely exaggerated.

“You—” Su Luo pushed him aside hatefully, “I simply never touched you before. Don’t say such nonsense!”

“What do you mean you haven’t? We’ve already shared a bed for so many days. The heavens had seen this, with mother earth as witness. You can’t renege on it!” Nangong Liuyun pointed to the heavens in a deadly earnest manner and then stepped on the earth.

His voice wasn’t low, it could be heard clearly within a range of several hundred meters.

Su Luo became extremely impatient and pushed Nangong Liuyun: “Move aside, move aside. Don’t block me. I still need to see the score.”

Who knew that Nangong Liuyun would, with one move, imprison her in his embrace: “No, if you don’t admit it, then I won’t let you see.”

Such a childish man! Su Luo groaned inwardly as she held her forehead up gracefully.

She really lost to him.

Chapter 1066 – White Jade Bridge (8)

“Will you say it or not?” This godlike, tenth-ranked expert was currently pressuring Su Luo to make a statement.

“Say what?” Su Luo gave a weak cough.

“Say that I am yours.” Our Highness Prince Jin’s face was not red, nor was he breathing hard. His expression was imposing and coldly solemn, as if he was talking about huge military issues, with that kind of heavy atmosphere.

“Cough, cough, cough.” Su Luo was choked to a stop.

“Will you say it or not?” Nangong Liuyun was overbearing, with an attitude of if she didn’t say it, there would be no end to this matter.

Su Luo evaded on this side, but as a lord, not aware of Li Yaoyao watching them who was so jealous that she trembled from head to toe. That pair of eyes which was staring at Su Luo seemed to almost spit out flames.

They were both woman!

She had known Third Senior Brother way before Su Luo!

However!

Her Third Senior Brother, who had always been pretty and flirtatious, demonically charming, tyrannically strong, coldly detached and heartless, now wished to obliterate her. Yet, he was forcing Su Luo, that slut, to say that he was hers!

Did he still have a little bit of the intensity of an expert? Did he still have a trace of the noble air of a royal? Did he still have a little bit of the dignity of a man?

This simply... simply angered Li Yaoyao so much that she nearly fainted.

If it was her, without saying anything further, she would have agreed a hundred times over.

However, Su Luo, this cheap woman, unexpectedly even argued, even desired to refuse, even forged ahead, still refusing to agree.

Oh, heavens, have lightning strike down this unreasonable, cheap woman, please.

Li Yaoyao was madly jealous.

However, even if she was jealous, so what? The man she liked... all of his attention was single-mindedly placed on Su Luo's body. He simply was disinclined to even glance at Li Yaoyao.

Su Luo was wrapped around by Nangong Liuyun's scoundrel-like appearance to the point she couldn't do anything about it except nod her head: "Okay, okay. You're mine. This should be fine, right?"

"Then you're mine too!" Nangong Liuyun seethingly said.

Oh heavens, how was this still that godlike His Highness Prince Jin? He was clearly a foolish boy who had sunk into the river of love.

Su Luo held up her forehead gracefully and nodded: "Okay, I am also yours."

"Eh! This is being obedient." As if he was petting a puppy, Nangong Liuyun lovingly messed up Su Luo's hair.

Su Luo didn't feel like dealing with him.

While the two people were having their dialog, the turntable on the wall finally came to a stop.

"Oh, heavens!" Seeing the number on that turntable, Li Yaoyao felt that her mind was overcome with waves of blankness.

"Unexpectedly, it's... seventy-five points?" Su Luo glanced back in a daze, and exchanged a look with Nangong Liuyun.

"This score isn't bad." Nangong Liuyun nodded.

"How is it just not bad? It's very good, okay?" Su Luo rolled her eyes at him.

Earlier, Luo Haochen and Luo Dieyi's group had only gotten a mere forty

points. Now, Beichen Ying and Zi Yan had almost doubled that score.

Li Yaoyao's gaze stared angrily at that turntable, wishing she could burn a hole into that turntable with her glare.

She wished she could directly set that number on fire and burn it until there was nothing left.

Because Li Yaoyao had thought everyone would get a generally low score. However, Beichen Ying group's number was completely outside of her expectations.

"It's now your turn." Nangong Liuyun's slender, tall and straight body was like a pine tree. His naturally cold gaze swept a glance at Situ Ming.

Situ Ming nodded and turned around to pull Li Yaoyao along.

Li Yaoyao seemed to have thought of something, and a strange cold smile appeared on her face: "My body feels unwell. I want to first rest for a while!"

Finished speaking, Li Yaoyao turned around and wanted to leave.

Nangong Liuyun's eyebrows knitted slightly, clearly somewhat displeased.

The corners of Su Luo's mouth hooked into a mocking sneer.

In order to prevent them from breaking through this challenge, Li Yaoyao was really being completely unscrupulous.

Before, when she wanted to be the fourth to go, her goal was abundantly clear.

Now, she was saying her body wasn't well, so she didn't want to go. Her intention was also obviously very clear.

Because they had only one day's worth of time to challenge this white jade bridge.

Chapter 1067 – White Jade Bridge (9)

If they couldn't break through within a day's time, everyone would be defeated.

Li Yaoyao's intention was so obvious, how could Nangong Liuyun let her do as she wished?

Nangong Liuyun's palms at his side had accumulated a spirit light.

"No way." Su Luo pulled Nangong Liuyun's hand to a stop, "If you knocked her out, what if the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls deliberately looked for a pretext to play some dirty trick?"

Su Luo felt that the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls seemed to delight in toying with them.

The more intense their internal struggles were, he would laugh with even more pleasure.

If he knocked Li Yaoyao's group unconscious, if the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls ran out to deduct their points, then that would be troublesome indeed.

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head.

Don't know how he moved.

One could only see an afterimage flash pass.

Li Yaoyao's body had already been tossed into the air, afterwards, being tossed in an arc shape, she shot towards the white jade bridge.

Everything seemed to be slow but actually happened in the blink of an eye.

"Third Junior Brother, you——!" Situ Ming never thought that Nangong Liuyun would do something this extreme.

So straightforward and decisive, simply didn't give a person the opportunity to react.

He grabbed Li Yaoyao and directly tossed her onto the white jade bridge, simply....!

"To step on the white jade bridge alone will lead to being killed." A relaxed smile hung on Nangong Liuyun's face.

That leisurely and content appearance, where was there even a trace of guilt?

The rage in Situ Ming's heart soared, but at this time, the most important thing was still Li Yaoyao.

Finally, Situ Ming fiercely glared at Nangong Liuyun, his body shot out, and he grabbed Li Yaoyao into his arms before she landed. He stood together with her on the white jade bridge.

"Are you okay?" Situ Ming eagerly asked.

Li Yaoyao's eyes were full of tears, sobbing spasmodically, saying: "Third Senior Brother...how could he...how could he treat me like this? I love him okay, I really love him very much. Could it be even this is wrong?"

Situ Ming was sour from the bottom of his heart, but he could only force a smile and hold her.

"No, I'm not going! I will just stand here on the bridge!" Li Yaoyao suddenly shook off Situ Ming, and loudly yelled.

Situ Ming revealed a bitter expression.

"I just won't go! I will just stand on this white jade bridge for a day! Humph, I'll just watch and see how Su Luo will cross this white jade bridge. I'll just see how she will go get that Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort!" Li Yaoyao acted in a fit of pique and humphed twice.

Nangong Liuyun had calculated the plan fully without omission. Among his plans, he had already calculated all aspects.

He had already calculated Situ Ming's temperament into it.

With how much he cherished Li Yaoyao, how could he look on unfeelingly as

he watched Li Yaoyao go die?

Because standing on the white jade bridge, if they didn't pass this challenge in one day, what was waiting for them was death.

"Yaoyao, don't act in a fit of pique, let us go across."

"No, I'm determined not to cross!" Li Yaoyao simply set down in place with both legs crossed and refused to walk on.

Situ Ming was extremely helpless.

"Yaoyao listen to me."

"No, I won't listen to you!"

"Yaoyao, you are using your own life to punish someone else, this is unworthy."

"Able to make it difficult for Third Senior Brother, I feel it is very much worth it!"

"Yaoyao!" Situ Ming really became angry.

The two people had already talked about this and that for a long time. Time passed by in one minute and one second increments, soon, less than four hours remained.

Outside of the white jade bridge.

Su Luo's thin brows was creased, as she somewhat anxiously said: "What is this Li Yaoyao trying to do? It couldn't be that she really won't go right?"

If she really won't go, then she and Nangong Liuyun, this team, would be directly removed from the list. They wouldn't be able to challenge the hurdles after this.

Just depending on Beichen Ying and Zi Yan, they might not necessarily be able to break through to the end and get the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort.

The chilliness in Nangong Liuyun's pupil became more and more cold, revealing a strong stern ruthlessness.

Chapter 1068 – White Jade Bridge (10)

“Don’t tell me you are not worried?” Su Luo lifted up her palm-sized little face and looked at him doubtfully.

Her complexion wasn’t good, the flawless white skin showed a paleness, making her coloring look bad too. At one glance, you could tell she was seriously injured.

Nangong Liuyun’s blood red lips perked up in a demonically charming manner, appearing sinister, shady and enchanting.

“Li Yaoyao dares, but Situ Ming, he wouldn’t dare.” Nangong Liuyun’s deep voice responded.

On the white jade bridge, as Nangong Liuyun had anticipated.

Even though Situ Ming did not approve of Nangong Liuyun’s recent conducts and deeds, however, he could still clearly see the situation.

This time, Nangong Liuyun coming to Xian’s Wood Residence was clearly because of the Scarlet Blood Ningpo Figwort.

If it was because Li Yaoyao deliberately stayed on the white jade bridge that held up this opportunity, then— — Based on Nangong Liuyun’s temper, following that would be a gale and rainstorm-like retaliation.

The Jade Lake’s Li family might be completely destroyed by him.

At twenty years old, he had the strength of a tenth rank, how bright of a future did this kind of person have? Who dared to have him as an enemy?

Therefore, Situ Ming could not allow Li Yaoyao to take such a rash action in a headstrong manner.

Seeing that there wasn’t much time left, Situ Ming once again urged her:

“Yaoyao, you really decided that you won’t go?”

“Not going! Determined not to go! Hahaha! There is less than four hours of time, I want to see how they can cross this white jade bridge!” Li Yaoyao’s appearance was twisted and malevolent, malicious rays of light radiating from her black pupils.

She just won’t allow it.

Even if you kill her, she won’t allow it!

“Yaoyao, don’t blame me.” Situ Ming took a deep breath of air, and a firm expression flashed through his eyes.

His hand raised up, forming a knife shape and chopping towards the back of Li Yaoyao’s nape.

Li Yaoyao was chopped unconscious, and fell without a sound.

Before she fell to the ground, Situ Ming had already caught her slacking body.

Situ Ming carried her over his shoulders, and took large strides to walk forward.

Outside of the white jade bridge.

Nangong Liuyun’s expression was tranquil and calm. Only those blood red-colored lips became increasingly pretty and flirtatious, demonically charming.

People familiar with him all knew that the respectable His Highness Prince Jin was already angry.

After, don’t know how long, had passed, from a far distance, came the sound of intense fighting.

This time’s fighting sound lasted a lot longer than the previous two times.

Immediately following it, the turntable appeared.

Those numbers on it stupefied Su Luo.

“Thirty-five points?” Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun in disbelief.

This time’s fighting time indeed was a little bit long.

But was it only worth thirty-five points? Wasn’t this rather a bit too low?

“If according to normal circumstances, this is impossible. But since it had already occurred....Could it be Situ Ming was the only one fighting?”

“Ah, he knocked Li Yaoyao unconscious.” Nangong said as if a weight was off his mind, “Come, next up is us.”

Su Luo also faintly guessed this point. Now, Nangong Liuyun saying it like this only confirmed her guess.

“There isn’t much time left.” Su Luo looked at the color of the sky, revealing a worried expression, “Situ Ming used three hours, he only left us one hour.”

“To cross this white jade bridge in one hour might not necessarily be that difficult, come, I’ll carry you on my back.”

Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo on his back and stepped foot on the white jade bridge.

Up ahead, the six people’s scores were forty points, seventy-five points, and thirty-five points.

Then what score was waiting for Su Luo?

This was still an unknown quantity.

Maybe there would be an upset, maybe it would still be like the first challenge with that kind bottom score.

Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo on his back, his speed exploding out to the peak.

Based on the sound that came from the first three groups, Nangong Liuyun knew that on this white jade bridge, there certainly would be a fierce battle.

The white jade bridge was surrounded by thick layers of white clouds all around. The fog was dense, so visibility was very low.

After dashing for about a quarter of an hour, Nangong Liuyun’s footsteps paused slightly.

Chapter 1069 – White Jade Bridge (11)

Because he felt that in the thick fog, was a pair of sharp and scorching eyes. It was staring fixedly at him.

That reaction from the body itself towards a crisis made him prudently stop his footsteps.

Just at this time.

Suddenly——

Clippity-clop——

A countless number of footstep sounds rushed towards Nangong Liuyun from all directions.

Nangong Liuyun tightly gripped the sword in his hand.

A tide of magical beasts rushed towards him, it's not a bother to him. But, if he was even a little inattentive, his Luo Luo might be injured.

Very quickly, the white jade bridge, from front and back, on both ends, had a countless number of Iron-spined Cheetahs rushing over.

It was a full one hundred Iron-spined Cheetahs!

Moreover, every one of the cheetahs' strength was very powerful.

Every cheetah's body gave off a faint purple-colored aura, as if glittering with purple light. Those sharp and fierce teeth glittered like frost and snow, malevolent and terrifying.

Each and every one of the Iron-spined Cheetahs sinisterly opened wide their bloody mouths, bellowing, snarling, noisily spraying out blood-colored breath. Their four hooves were like iron, and like the wind, they rushed towards Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun who were surrounded in the middle.

The hard surface made of white jade shook faintly, issuing a deafening noise.

These orderly iron hooves sounded as if they were one, trampling the entire white jade bridge until it nearly collapsed.

Su Luo's thin eyebrows knotted tightly.

If she didn't remember it wrong, before, the sounds that the different group gave off wasn't this intense.

"Luo Luo, stay in the diagram and don't move." Nangong Liuyun had protected Su Luo completely.

He split out thirty percent of his strength, drew a circle and asked Su Luo to go in.

This was a protective cover, even if it was the Iron-spined Cheetahs, don't even think about stretching a claw in.

"But...." If she goes in, when the time comes, the most they could get was fifty points, right? Didn't it mean that they had lost for sure?

"These Iron-spined Cheetahs, every one of them is at the summit of the ninth rank in strength. With one breath blown by them, you will be dead." Nangong Liuyun's words weren't just to scare people.

In fact, the Iron-spined Cheetahs at the summit of the ninth rank indeed has astonishing strength.

Now, Su Luo was in such a fragile state of health, she absolutely would be blown to the ground by one breath.

"Summit of the ninth rank?" Su Luo felt that this challenge was too defiant of the natural order.

"If it is the summit of the ninth rank, then how did the other groups from before cross?" Su Luo, who was staying in the protective cover, completely safe, still was puzzled by this.

"If I didn't guess wrongly, right now, we are inside a virtual world, and these Iron-spined Cheetahs will be at a corresponding level according to a person's strength."

“Hahaha——” A domineering howl of mad laughter came from the sky, “Boy, not bad. Out of these four groups, only you could think of this point, not bad, not bad.”

“You guessed it right, these stupid animals are indeed according to the challenger’s strength, and are lower by one level accordingly. Now, all of them are existences at the summit of the ninth rank.”

Su Luo immediately stood up, and said with hidden bitterness: “Then what about me? I’m only at the sixth rank ah!”

That wild domineering voice laughed until he sounded increasingly crazy: “Hahahahaha——little girl, you can be ignored and disregarded!”

Finished speaking, this voice disappeared and couldn’t be heard again.

Su Luo’s face was wrinkled until it looked like a bitter melon from being ignored and disregarded.

“Ignored and disregarded?” Were there any words that were more hurtful than this?

Our Su Luo, with luck that defied nature, for the first time, was miserable.

Nangong Liuyun pursed his lips and wanted to laugh, but was afraid that if he laughed, it would strike a blow to this girl. He had no choice but to turn his head away.

“Out of the question! No matter how low, I cannot be ignored or disregarded! As for the process, Nangong Liuyun, you come over and think of a way!” Luo girl was furious.

“Okay.” With a flash in his eyes, Nangong Liuyun came up with an idea.

Now the group of Iron-spined Cheetahs had arrived in a tide-like surge, that huge imposing aura nearly drowning them out.

Chapter 1070 – White Jade Bridge (12)

One hundred heads of Iron-spined Cheetahs at the summit of the ninth rank, even Nangong Liuyun had no choice but to be cautious.

The distance between both parties continued to draw closer.

One hundred meters.

Fifty meters.

Thirty meters.

Ten meters!!!

From front and back, there were a total of one hundred Iron-spined Cheetahs, in a split second, they rushed forth like the tide, nearly drowning Nangong Liuyun in the waves.

In the last ten meters, Nangong Liuyun moved.

“Howl——” The leading Iron-spined Cheetah had the strength of a tenth rank!

Its sharp fierce tooth was the first to strike towards Nangong Liuyun!

Nangong Liuyun gripped his long sword tightly, his eyes flickering with cold light. His mind was rapidly calculating the most accurate data.

Just when the leading Iron-spined Cheetah charged forward.

Nangong Liuyun’s foot slightly shifted left by half a step, and the long sword in his hand sliced over!

“Swoosh!”

A light sound echoed, and the head of the leading Iron-spined Cheetah was directly cut off!

It landed on the ground and rolled around again with a crashing sound.

That Iron-spined Cheetah lacking a head had blood rushing out like spring water.

On the occupied and snow-white, white jade bridge, immediately, blood pervaded throughout.

Once the leader of the Iron-spined Cheetah died, this aroused the intense fighting spirit of the remaining cheetahs!

Blood as far as the eye could see aroused their most primitive fighting instincts to the peak.

“Roar! Roar! Roar——”

Front, back, left and right were all densely filled areas with Iron-spined Cheetahs.

Every one of these cheetahs was the size of an elephant, their bodies were sturdy with a defense similar to a tank.

The reason why Nangong Liuyun could resolve the leader of the Iron-spined Cheetah in one sword strike could largely be credited to the calculations in his head.

Just now, when Nangong Liuyun beheaded the leader of the Iron-spined Cheetah, his speed was like electricity given off by a flint stone strike.

At last, after the head fell to the ground, was when the rest of the Iron-spined Cheetahs had arrived.

One Iron-spined Cheetah suddenly knocked towards Nangong Liuyun.

The tip of Nangong Liuyun's foot tapped on its fierce tooth, using the strength of the recoil to fly into mid-air.

Having lost Nangong Liuyun, this target, these Iron-spined Cheetahs paused their conspicuous and incomparably rash movements.

As a result, all of the cheetahs encircled towards Su Luo's protective covering.

Each and every one of the Iron-spined Cheetahs rushed up, but one after another, they were sent flying.

Because the protective cover was incomparably hard. Moreover, it was

exceptionally elastic.

But even like this, the Iron-spined Cheetahs that had their eyes deceived by the enemy still advanced forward, wave after wave.

One wave was flicked away, the second wave continued to rush forward.

Simply like an assault squadron that wasn't afraid of death.

Nangong Liuyun who was standing in mid-air, his dark red lips hooked into a sinister smirk.

His fingers flew, forming, one after another, complicated seals.

"Splash——" A bucket of rainwater fell from the sky, sprinkling onto the body of the Iron-spined Cheetahs.

Nangong Liuyun's space bag contained a lot of fresh water, now, he just so happened to find a use for it.

These scattered rainwater simply couldn't injure the Iron-spined Cheetahs.

Their attention was still placed on Su Luo's body.

Whereas Su Luo, who was in the transparent protective cover, sat in place with her legs crossed with one hand supporting her chin. She watched with interest those Iron-spined Cheetahs, with inflamed foreheads from knocking against the cover.

There were even a few Iron-spined Cheetahs that, due to hitting the protective covering with too strong of a force, had naturally knocked themselves out.

The wave of Iron-spined Cheetahs behind it rushed up violently, as a result, those few Iron-spined Cheetahs that fainted immediately lost their lives under the iron hooves of their companions.

In fact, if the leader of the Iron-spined Cheetahs hadn't died with its force of impact, it could have knocked apart this protective cover.

However, it was also because of this, that Nangong Liuyun had terminated it in the very beginning.

Su Luo would look on like this with a pondering posture, as if watching a huge,

thrilling action drama.

Chapter 1071 – White Jade Bridge (13)

Whereas Su Luo, who was in a dangerous situation, had a relaxed and leisurely expression without a trace of alarm.

Just at this moment, Nangong Liuyun had finished making the complicated seals with his hand.

Suddenly, in the sky, a lightning dragon serpent shaped leapt by!

Immediately following were countless number of lightning dragon serpents that approached like a torrential rush. All of them smashed towards the ground!

The water that Nangong Liuyun sprinkled before, none of the Iron-spined Cheetahs had paid it any mind, completely ignoring it.

But now, it finally showed its usefulness.

The places where the thunderous lightning passed, one could only hear a burst of crackling sounds.

The sounds would not end!

Those Iron-spined Cheetahs that had rushed up, suddenly had their bodies wrapped around by the lightning dragon serpents.

Those purplish-red sturdy bodies were completely enveloped among the flaming lightning serpents.

Each and every one of the Iron-spined Cheetahs were like hanging neon lamps, flickering incessantly.

Su Luo simply gasped in amazement while watching this.

What kind of amazing scene was this?

Wasn't Nangong Liuyun too cool, okay?

Running to mid-air like this, then sprinkling down several basins of water. Then, he had lightning after lightning smashing down, afterwards, he was able to wrap up these Iron-spined Cheetahs at the summit of ninth rank to a stop.

Nangong Liuyun leisurely stood in mid-air, his gaze was serene and godlike, aloof and remote as he looked down at the masses.

And those Iron-spined Cheetahs that were wrapped up by the flaming lightning dragon serpents were like the lowly ants. Even though just one of these Iron-spined Cheetahs released in the world could overturn a country.

Nangong Liuyun, seeing Su Luo's shocked little expression, secretly rejoiced in his heart and raised an eyebrow, being proud of himself.

Recalling what Su Luo had said before, our Highness Prince Jin, with a flap of his hand, tossed an Iron-spined Cheetah into the protective covering.

The Iron-spined Cheetah that was tossed into the protective covering had the lightning around it already erased by Nangong Liuyun.

Because our Highness Prince Jin loved his family's Luo girl the most, wherefore would he allow her to be injured even a little bit?

Even though the lightning around it was erased, this Iron-spined Cheetah was already gasping its last breath.

According to normal evaluation of its health, the only thing left of this Iron Spined Cheetah was a layer of blood and fur. It was so weak that it was more or less dead.

How great of a rapport did Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun have?

Su Luo immediately understood his intent with this Iron-spined Cheetah that was tossed in.

She rummaged around her sleeves and took out that Yan Hua dagger.

Even though the Iron-spined Cheetah was almost dead, its fur was still tough with thick flesh, other weapons simply could not cut through.

Even using the Yan Hua dagger, Su Luo felt it was still difficult.

Su Luo, as an assassin, when killing a person was how direct and efficient?

However, now faced with the motionless Iron-spined Cheetah allowing her to slaughter, Su Luo wished to cry but lacked the tears.

Because she almost couldn't cut into its defense.

“Slice, slice——”

The Yan Hua dagger in Su Luo's hand that was incomparably sharp and cut things as if they were hair, cut at the Iron-spined Cheetah's neck.

Nangong Liuyun, who was in mid-air, originally stood there leisurely, inadvertently shot her a glance and saw her sawing-like movements, he nearly stumbled and fell down.

He gracefully supported his forehead and turned his face away, pretending not to have seen it.

Su Luo, who was inside the protective covering in order to show the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls that she wasn't a person to be ignored or disregarded, was busy trying very hard.

Su Luo, at her peak after pouring in spirit force, could stab this Iron-spined Cheetah to death with one thrust of the sword. But now, she could only cut it little by little.

Su Luo originally thought of getting the little divine dragon or the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox to help. But after entering this white jade bridge, don't know what was the matter with those two spirit pets that had entered her space, no matter what, they couldn't come out.

Su Luo thought to herself, letting her spirit pets help her might not be in accordance to the rules.

As a result, the pitiful Su Luo could only hold the Yan Hua dagger by herself and, with grinding sounds, sawed away.

Chapter 1072 – White Jade Bridge (14)

Su Luo sawed away until her forehead started to perspire. She finally cut through that Iron-spined Cheetah's defense, then directly stabbed it to death with one cut!

With great difficulty, she killed one, and Su Luo was so tired that she could hardly breathe.

Su Luo leaned back and dropped to sit on the ground, gasping for large mouthful after large mouthful of air.

This broken body, having possession of all these favorable conditions, it was just lying there like fish meat on a chopping block, yet it cost her this much to kill it, alas.

Su Luo adjusted her lower body, just when she was prepared to kill the second one, but discovered—

The battle was already finished.

Nangong Liuyun leisurely came down from mid-air. With a wave of his wide sleeves, the protective cover disappeared.

Su Luo glanced at the scene outside.

The originally busy and snow white-colored white jade bridge, now, was densely packed with a ground full of corpses.

These Iron-spined Cheetahs' corpses, besides the one she personally cut, the rest were all charred, looking like coal giving off smoke and fire.

Seeing it shocked the eyes and astonished a person's heart.

Nangong Liuyun pulled Su Luo up and patted at the dust that didn't exist on her body.

With a light pull, he had her on his back.

“The ground is dirty, careful not to get your shoes dirty.” Nangong Liuyun said in a gentle tone.

“You really are...” It took a long time for Su Luo to return to her senses.

This was a full one hundred heads of Iron-spined Cheetahs at the summit of the ninth rank ah! Although somewhat stupid, just like this, it was all scooped up in one go. They were so burned that even the corpses weren't left behind...

Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun with matchless adoration, giving him a thumbs up: “Awesome!”

Nangong Liuyun modestly cupped his hand in salute: “No better or worse than others.”

“No better or worse my ass!” Su Luo almost took a bite of his back.

She had sat on the ground and cut away for a long time before stabbing the Iron-spined Cheetah that only had blood remaining to death.

But what about him?

Nangong Liuyun's words were clearly sarcastic!

Nangong Liuyun had the urge to smile, but with a glare from Su Luo, immediately, he didn't dare to smile.

“There is not much time left. Let us quickly go.” Nangong Liuyun's words barely faded before he carried Su Luo on his back and, with flying speed, rushed forward.

Now, at the other end of the white jade bridge.

The three teams with six people now stood together.

Beichen Ying nervously walked back and forth, so anxious that smoke nearly came out from his forehead.

Zi Yan was dizzy from watching him walking around in circles, and couldn't help but glare at him: “You should stop walking, your walking is about to make me throw up!”

Beichen Ying, for lack of a better option, stopped, responding to say: “I'm very

anxious, okay? After another cup of tea's time, the time limit will arrive!"

With regards to whether Nangong Liuyun could cross the white jade bridge, Beichen Ying wasn't a bit worried.

However, whether they could arrive within the stipulated time, this point made his heart endlessly worried.

He had barely finished speaking before Zi Yan's wrathful gaze shot towards Li Yaoyao, who sat on the ground with legs crossed.

"Li Yaoyao, I'm telling you, if Luo Luo doesn't arrive within the stipulated time because of you, then you should just go die!"

Li Yaoyao coldly took a glance at her, then closed her eyes to rest.

Beichen Ying stood behind Zi Yan's body, his gaze unprecedentedly sharp: "You think that she alone is able to carry this responsibility? Humph, if Second Brother can't cross, then not only her, but the entire Jade Lake's Li family will be buried with her!"

Li Yaoyao's expression didn't change, but her heart was suffering bitterly.

Before, she really was headstrong and took some rash actions, but now, she already regretted it.

Because, when she did that, not only did she destroy Su Luo, she also destroyed her most beloved Third Senior Brother ah....

If something happened to Third Senior Brother, she really didn't know what she ought to do...

Li Yaoyao's heart felt helpless and at a loss, agonizing over and over again at this.

"Time is almost up! What to do!" Beichen Ying looked at the time that was constantly counting down, his heart extremely anxious.

Chapter 1073 – White Jade Bridge (15)

Just at this moment, a figure flashed by on the white jade bridge.

Very quickly, Nangong Liuyun's body appeared at the end of the bridge.

"Second Brother!" Beichen Ying took quick steps up to welcome him. So excited that he nearly started to jump up.

"Luo Luo! Are you guys okay?" Zi Yan rushed up with a few quick steps, asking anxiously and with deep concern.

Su Luo weakly smiled: "Not bad, finally caught up."

Seeing Nangong Liuyun arriving safe and sound, Li Yaoyao rejoiced in her heart and was just about to take a step forward.

However, when she lifted her eyes, her gaze met Nangong Liuyun's.

Nangong Liuyun's eyes were gloomy and ruthless, his face seemed to be shrouded in cold frost as he fiercely swept a severe glance at Li Yaoyao.

Li Yaoyao's heart immediately sunk to the bottom.

She stood rigid on the spot with a complexion that was ugly to the extreme.

Third Senior Brother....that loathing and detesting expression...was it really Third Senior Brother?

Just at this moment, a black-colored turntable suddenly appeared on the white jade bridge.

Everyone's gaze was attracted by the black-colored turntable.

Because the score that this black-colored turntable spun out, would determine who would get the reward for this challenge.

The black-colored turntable spun on non-stop.

However, Su Luo was already sighing alas.

Because she had a premonition, the scores this time wouldn't be too high.

Even though Nangong Liuyun was able to kill all the Iron-spined Cheetahs at the summit of the ninth rank within a short time, but it was no match for her, this obstruction, ah.

The master of the Nine Different Palace Halls had personally said that her existence was one to be ignored and disregarded.

Su Luo suddenly felt that she wanted to cry but lacked the tears.

Very quickly, the scores came out.

“Fifty-one points!”

Zi Yan cried out in surprise!

“Third Senior Brother, didn't you guys very quickly behead the Iron-spined Cheetahs? How could it only be...fifty one points ah?”

Beichen Ying also looked in puzzlement and doubt at Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun.

Su Luo's little face was wrinkled like a bitter melon, while heaving deep sighs.

Not only was their speed at beheading them very fast, but also, all the Iron-spined Cheetahs were at the summit of the ninth rank okay?

Nangong Liuyun indeed perfectly accomplished the mission, no, he completed the mission above the requirement.

But she Su Luo...just only cut down one ah....

As a result, Nangong Liuyun got fifty points, she, Su Luo, only got that very tiny one point...

Having thought through to this point, Su Luo simply was about to cry.

Zi Yan pulled at Su Luo, continuously comforting her: “Don't cry, don't cry, able to safely cross over is already a victory. There are still more challenges after this, right?”

Su Luo's entire depressed face was buried in Nangong Liuyun's embrace.

Nangong Liuyun lovingly stroked her hair, smilingly saying to everyone: "It's nothing, my family's Luo Luo is shy."

Shy my ass! Su Luo's fist hammered towards Nangong Liuyun's lean, warm chest.

While speaking and laughing, the rewards for the second challenge arrived.

From the start, Beichen and Zi Yan thought that this challenge would be like the first one. A light beam would come to promote their cultivation by one level.

However, after the rewards arrived, it was completely unlike the one before.

Very quickly, a spherical shape appeared in front of their body.

"It's a spirit pinball." Su Luo's eyes momentarily brightened.

"Yes, tenth-ranked spirit pinball." Nangong Liuyun only swept one glance at it before he knew.

"Tenth-ranked spirit pinball!" Li Yaoyao was so jealous that her eyes were almost red.

Nobody expected that the reward for the second challenge was two tenth-ranked spirit pinballs.

If she had a tenth-ranked spirit pinball in her hand, who couldn't she kill? Li Yaoyao thought up to here, and her gaze hatefully glared at Su Luo who was buried in Nangong Liuyun's arms.

However, no matter how jealous Li Yaoyao was, these two spirit pinballs still were given and belonged to Beichen Ying and Zi Yan.

"Congratulations." Su Luo sincerely said.

A tenth-ranked spirit pinball, to a very huge degree, was equivalent to preserving their life.

Compared to the first challenge, the reward for the second challenge was much better.

Chapter 1074 – Swift Cloud Slope (1)

There were a total of nine challenges, now, they had only completed two challenges.

But these two challenges already had everyone nearly give up their life and be buried here. It could clearly be seen how difficult the challenges coming up would be.

Based on the scores from the two challenges, the overall total scores were:
Luo Dieyi's team: one hundred twenty points

Zi Yan's team: one hundred and fifty points

Li Yaoyao team: one hundred and five points

Su Luo's team: one hundred and one points

Seeing this kind of score, Su Luo directly frowned.

Nangong Liuyun, who was at the absolute top of the experts, was encumbered by her to be number one from the bottom.

Originally, Su Luo was still full of confidence, but now, she was a touch rattled at the prospect of winning this.

“Don't worry, I will always be by your side.” Nangong Liuyun tightened his hand over hers and smiled at her like the spring wind.

“En!” Su Luo seriously nodded her head.

Just at this moment, everyone only felt a burst of vertigo in their minds.

When they opened their eyes again, Su Luo and them were already deep in the center of a forest with lush growth on the ground.

As for the several other people, unexpectedly, they had all disappeared.

This third challenge actually split all of the teams up, not like the first two challenges where they cleared it in sequential order.

However, this third challenge, in the end, what must one do for it?

Just at this time, the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls' wild uninhibited voice sounded from mid-air.

“Stepping past the Swift Cloud Slope will be regarded as having passed.”

The voice had just finished speaking, without giving the two of them an opportunity to ask questions. This master of the Nine Different Palace Halls that stood high above disappeared again.

Step past the Swift Cloud Slope? Where was this Swift Cloud Slope? Su Luo's eyes roved around.

“It's over there.” Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo in the princess hold, taking large strides forward.

Very quickly, the scene on the left side appeared in Su Luo's eyes.

So tall and erect, reaching to the top of the sky, that it made people flinch.

On that sleek cliff wall was carved with eye-grabbing characters that was scarlet red and dripping.

“Swift Cloud Slope.”

“There is nothing here.” Su Luo looked everywhere and discovered that the path to the Swift Cloud Slope was smooth.

“The danger isn't here, let's go.” Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo on his back and unhurriedly walked towards the mountain.

The two people were carefree and at ease, so leisurely as if going on a scenic tour.

The Swift Cloud Slope was relaxing, all around was inviting green meadows and white dense fog, giving people the illusion of having arrived in fairyland.

The two people walked for about one hour.

Suddenly, Nangong Liuyun's footsteps paused slightly.

Su Luo's heart followed and tightened a little.

"Is there a situation?" Su Luo asked in a low voice.

Nangong Liuyun slowly nodded his head: "There is danger up ahead, first, you remain here, I'll go over and have a look."

"But if I don't participate, even if you win the fight, it's only fifty points."

Su Luo raised her palm-sized little face, you could see to the bottom of her crystal clear and monochrome eyes. Nangong Liuyun's image was clearly reflected in them.

"The scores are not as important as you." Nangong Liuyun frowned.

"However, without the scores, no matter how important I am, I'll still be..."
Being horizontally swept by Nangong Liuyun's glare, Su Luo, in the end, was unable to say that word.

"Okay, if the situation is amiss, you will hurriedly withdraw back here."
Nangong Liuyun pointed at the huge tree on the side of the road.

This kind of distance was already far from the dangerous area.

"Rest assured, I won't hinder you." Su Luo's face spread out in a smile.

Nangong Liuyun once again carried Su Luo on his back, but this time, he was clearly more cautious.

Able to make Nangong Liuyun cautious enough to enter a state of preparing for war, it could clearly be seen how strong the danger up ahead was.

Su Luo concentrated all her attention on watching the area up ahead.

Very quickly, a huge monster appeared in her line of sight.

That was a huge creature that was several dozens of meters high.

This huge creature's appearance was unusual, with a bear's head, tiger's eyes, leopard's body...it was practically a mixture of all kinds of wild beasts.

Chapter 1075 – Swift Cloud Slope (2)

At this moment, its enormous body was laying on the side of the hillside, with loud snoring sounds.

However, even though it was sleeping, its body still gave off a dangerous aura. It was able to make people tremble in terror from the depths of their heart.

“Can’t we stealthily sneak past it?” Su Luo asked in a low voice.

“Afraid not.” Nangong Liuyun looked ahead, his eyes flashing with a sharp light, “You stand back a little more, this golden-colored monster is about to wake up.”

Su Luo had no better options and could only do as he said.

She silently retreated, very carefully stepping backwards.

As Nangong Liuyun had expected, in less time it took to take another breath, that golden-colored monster woke up.

Nangong Liuyun did not wait until it completely woke up, a dragon serpent-shaped lightning bolt shot horizontally towards its forehead!

The thunderous lightning flashed around on top of its golden horn, then, it turned into nothingness!

Immunity to thunderous lightning?

Nangong Liuyun’s eyes slightly condensed into frost.

This was his first time encountering immunity to thunderous lightning.

However, because that golden-colored monster was immune to thunderous lightning, it completely woke up from the attack.

The golden-colored monster got angry!

Golden rays circulated around its enormous body, a dense black fog spraying out from its nostrils!

Its pair of huge eyes fixed on Nangong Liuyun's eyes.

Those dark golden eyes contained wrath, endless ire!

Like two furious flames that were ignited!

“Roar——” The golden-colored magical beast thundered furiously, its huge body that was like a small mountain peak, suddenly pounced towards Nangong Liuyun!

It was very very hungry, so hungry that it could devour the whole mountain peak!

It opened its bloody mouth wide, its long tongue sweeping towards Nangong Liuyun.

In contrast to its enormous body, Nangong Liuyun's figure seemed unusually small.

While the golden-colored magical beast's tongue was sweeping over, a cyan sword suddenly appeared in Nangong Liuyun's hand.

“Swoosh!” A loud sound could be heard, and the blue sword sliced across that huge tongue.

This time, Nangong Liuyun used ninety percent of his strength.

However, only a minute scar was left on that dark red tongue.

The golden magical beast became even more furious!

Nangong Liuyun flew to mid-air, an endless stream of columns of fire shooting toward the golden-colored magical beast.

Column of flames's might were ten times stronger than fireballs, moreover, it was able to continuously attack.

The golden-colored magical beast's body was pitch-black from being burned by the columns of flame.

Its golden body was immune to the lightning element, but had no immunity to other elements.

Nangong Liuyun was a three elements system mage, besides the lightning element, he still had fire and wind elements to attack with.

Momentarily, great waves were set off in the originally calm valley.

The light of flames flickered, wind blades flew.

The golden-colored magical beast's bellowing and roaring sounds was continuously mixed with the sounds of counterattack.

Boom! Boom!

Both sides released their finishing blow, and both retreated back.

The strength of the magical beasts in this Nine Different Palace Halls was all very strange.

It was all based on the strongest among the two people challenging this trial. The strongest person's strength was copied.

Moreover, the copy was calculated accurately to a state of perfection.

Nangong Liuyun was at the tenth rank, therefore, the magical beast he needed to confront was all at the tenth rank.

Similarly, Beichen Ying was at the eighth rank, so he would face magical beasts at the eighth rank.

It was also because of all kinds of restrictions, although Nangong Liuyun's strength was the strongest, yet they were always ranked in last place.

Just when both sides were caught up in the unresolvable fight.

All of a sudden, a smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast walked unsteadily out from a small cave.

This smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast obviously had just woken up. Now, it's sleepily rubbing at its drowsy eyes while swaying back and forth as it walked over.

Chapter 1076 – Swift Cloud Slope (3)

Saying it was a smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast, was entirely based on comparison to the other enormous golden-colored magical beast.

In fact, this smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast wasn't small at all, about five meters long, and three meters high.

At a glance, this smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast was the cub of that enormous golden-colored magical beast.

At this time, it was walking in a wobbly manner to where Su Luo was.

Nangong Liuyun saw this from the corner of his eyes and then immediately trembled!

Right now, Su Luo was weak to what degree, he clearly understood more than anyone else.

Just a casual wave of that smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast's paw, and Su Luo could be scattered like pieces of paper!

Nangong Liuyun abandoned his battle with that enormous golden-colored magical beast, turned around and immediately shot towards Su Luo's position!

However, just at this moment, that enormous golden-colored magical beast used a lightning ray to envelop Nangong Liuyun, forcing him to a stop!

The lightning rays flickered with no way out.

So, it turned out this enormous golden-colored magical beast also had the lightning element, before, Nangong Liuyun's lightning attacks were all collected into the dark golden thorns, and now, it was released all at once.

Although Nangong Liuyun's heart was irascible, his face was still as calm as before.

His fingers moved, one after another, rays of lightning burst out, relentlessly fighting with those rays of lightning surrounding him.

However now, he simply could not move a single step, unable to lend a hand to go save Su Luo.

However, speaking of Su Luo's side.

This smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast walked in a wobbly fashion towards Su Luo.

Su Luo's eyes narrowed dangerously.

If she was at the peak of her strength, with the help of the little divine dragon's type of spirit pet, then she could still battle with this small magical beast.

But now, it was completely impossible.

Su Luo's face remained cool, calm as water, but her feet slowly retreated, step by step.

“Bang——”

Su Luo wasn't paying attention and her back bumped against a thousand-year-old tree, issuing a hitting sound.

Su Luo almost spit out a mouthful of blood from the bump.

Just at this moment.

In mid-air, that enormous golden magical beast roared angrily!

As it turned out, Nangong Liuyun had taken advantage of it being off guard, and the cyan double-edged sword in his hand suddenly pierced its eyes!

Immediately, that eye dripped with blood in a terrifyingly sinister manner!

The enormous golden-colored magical beast exploded out in raging waves of furious roars!

This thunderous roar, was so furious as if it would tear the entire mountain to shreds.

Su Luo faced this seemingly innocent, confused and even a little naturally

foolish smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast, now, a touch of blood flashing through its eyes.

Its appearance became terribly malevolent in a flash, its body suddenly jumped lengthwise towards Su Luo.

If it pounced on her body, Su Luo's body would definitely be shaken into pieces.

Just at this moment of life or death!

Suddenly, an extra little thing that was furry, velvety and snow-white appeared in Su Luo's arms.

This was the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox that was subdued by the little divine dragon before on the snowy plateau.

This Nine-tailed Spirit Fox sat peacefully in Su Luo's arms, with its two small claws gesticulating in the air, don't know what it was doing.

However, no matter what it was doing, it was already too late.

Because——

This smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast was already almost within reach.

Su Luo could smell that dense bloody flavor on its body and that strong destructive power.

At her back was the ancient tree, Su Luo had no way to retreat and she couldn't avoid it.

Su Luo wanted to cast the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox aside, letting it escape as an opportunity to live.

But, at this moment, the tiny Nine-tailed Spirit Fox seemed to have grown from her body, she couldn't tear it off no matter what.

That smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast's wide open bloody mouth had already arrived in front of her eyes—— That mouth which reeked of blood made Su Luo nauseous.

The Grim Reaper had already quietly arrived.

“Luo Luo!!!” Nangong Liuyun completely disregarded the injury on his back, and with flying speed, shoot towards Su Luo’s side.

Chapter 1077 – Swift Cloud Slope (4)

However, ‘the water afar couldn’t put out the fire’, Nangong Liuyun’s rescue was still too late.

In this most critical moment!

Suddenly!

The little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox in Su Luo’s arms pointed with its finger, it tapped the forehead of that smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast.

One could only hear a ‘hiss——’ sound echoing.

That smaller -sized golden-colored magical beast with a huge body, suddenly, in front of Su Luo’s eyes, with a speed that the naked eye could see, directly was changed into a soft little lamb!

A little lamb!

It was absolutely true, it became a tiny, cute little lamb.

Su Luo was simply stunned!

Also, it was chaos!

What was up with this world? What was with this little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox?

In the time it took for the little fox to lift a claw, suddenly, the huge thing became a meek little sheep.

“Awoo Awoo!” Quickly kill, quickly kill it, time was almost over!

The Nine-tailed Spirit Fox pulled at Su Luo’s hands, in an urgent tone, urging her to kill it.

After saying this sentence, the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox’s body swayed and fell into Su Luo’s arms, it thoroughly fainted.

Very clearly, the skill it had used on the smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast, had already overdrawn its spirit strength.

However, Su Luo could clearly understand the meaning in the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's words.

But....kill? How could she kill it?

Su Luo depressedly scratched her head.

Suddenly, her eyes lit up.

One could only see Su Luo take out a handful of tender green grass, and placed it in front of the little sheep.

The little sheep seemed to be extremely hungry and used its claws to grab a handful of grass to stuff it into its mouth.

On those green grass, Su Luo had sprinkled a little bit of Celestial Spirit Water.

Therefore, the little sheep instinctively wasn't guarded against it. After it finished eating one handful of grass, it followed directly with eating another handful.

Nangong Liuyun saw that the danger here was temporarily lifted and the enormous golden-colored magical beast was behind him pursuing relentlessly, unwilling to let him go, so he turned around and once again started to fight with that magical beast.

When Nangong Liuyun finished off that enormous golden-colored magical beast, Su Luo's situation here also had come to an end.

That smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast that was turned into a little sheep, its tiny body swayed, with eyes that gradually became misty.

"Three, two, one....fall!" Su Luo animatedly counted.

Sure enough, when she finished counting down to the word 'fall', that little sheep couldn't stand anymore. Both of its legs lacked strength as it fell to the ground with a loud bang.

The moment it fell to the ground, it once again regained its original body.

As it turned out, the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox could only temporarily turn it into a

little lamb, rather than turning it into a real little lamb.

Su Luo thought about it some more.

That's right, if the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox really had this ability, then what in the world could stand in its way?

In this world, even the most gifted race, also had certain restrictions. It was to maintain a balance on the surface where the races mutually restrained each other.

After Nangong Liuyun cleaned up that enormous golden-colored magical beast, he returned to Su Luo's side.

He carefully examined Su Luo from top to bottom once through, before he felt somewhat reassured. He still had lingering fear as he reminded her: "In the future, don't be headstrong again. You are not allowed to join the battle again!"

Su Luo's eyes gleamed as she deliberately changed the topic: "Oh, that's right, just now, the skill the little fox used, have you heard of it before?"

"That ought to be Transform into Sheep Technique." Nangong Liuyun's gaze seemed far away, and half narrowed, "Didn't expect, this Nine-tailed Spirit Fox, turned out to be the king among the Nine-tailed Spirit Foxes."

"W-what?" The little divine dragon just made a random grab, and caught the king among the Nine-tailed Spirit Foxes? Wasn't this too awesome okay?

"That's right, it's indeed the king among the spirit foxes." Nangong Liuyun said with certainty, "The ancient books have recorded, the king of spirit foxes was born with transformation techniques, able to change huge magical beasts into sheeps. This is the legendary Transformation into Sheep Technique. Only, I never expected this matter to be true."

Chapter 1078 – Swift Cloud Slope (5)

“Transform into Sheep Technique?” Su Luo asked in a daze.

“Yes, Transform into Sheep Technique. In a certain period of time, it can turn a very strong beast into a little weak lamb.”

“Isn’t it very easy to kill then? Su Luo’s eyes brightened.

However, recalling what happened just now, that little lamb, although it seemed easy to kill, its body still gave off a strong murderous aura from its original appearance. She simply couldn’t get close to it.

If it weren’t for her adding a black liquid drug made from nine thousand nine hundred and eighty-one kinds of highly toxic materials into that tender grass, that little lamb couldn’t possibly have fallen.

Nangong Liuyun shook his head: “No, even though the opponent was turned into a small lamb, its strength is still there. If you take the initiative to attack, you would still suffer a crushing defeat. However, the most important use for the Transform into Sheep Technique is to flee and hide.”

“Meaning, that after it was turned into a lamb, I could easily escape?”

“That’s right. During the time it was turned into a lamb, it wouldn’t take the initiative to attack other people. Then, the opponent can simply escape. This is the essence of the Transform into Sheep Technique.”

“So it’s like this.” Su Luo used gentle movements to pet the little thing in her arms.

This little thing clearly hasn’t grown up yet, its strength was still not enough. As a result, after only using the Transform into Sheep Technique once, it fainted and remained unconscious.

However, Su Luo was very grateful to it in her heart.

If the little spirit fox hadn't used the Transform into Sheep Technique at the critical moment, everything pointed to her maybe losing her life.

"Little guy, you must quickly grow up. In the future, all the fleeing will depend on you." Su Luo smilingly said.

Just recalling this little thing using a finger to point and a very strong magical beast was turned into a meek lamb, Su Luo felt endlessly pleased in her heart.

"The magical beast has already been killed, let's go." Nangong Liuyun carried Su Luo, and took large strides to walk away.

The two people safely climbed up the Swift Cloud Slope.

At this moment, there was only the two of them on top of the Swift Cloud Slope.

Very clearly, their speed was the fastest.

Not long after, Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming, looking haggard, also climbed up.

Li Yaoyao saw Su Luo in Nangong Liuyun's arms, and a malicious cold light flashed through her eyes.

Originally, Li Yaoyao thought that her team would be first, she absolutely didn't expect Su Luo's team, that was always last, would actually climb up the Swift Cloud Slope faster than them.

Su Luo's gaze fell on Li Yaoyao's body.

Li Yaoyao now seemed to cut an even sorrier figure.

Her clothes were mottled with bloodstains, tattered and worn-out, it was worse than a beggar's clothing.

Her original exquisite appearance, now, was filthy with specks of blood. There was even a sinister wound on her right cheek.

"What are you staring at! Never seen a beautiful woman ah!" Li Yaoyao heavily snorted.

Su Luo calmly nodded her head, and unhurriedly sighed: "I've seen beautiful women before, but never seen a beautiful woman turn into an ugly woman."

"You——" Li Yaoyao, panting with rage, glared at Su Luo.

If it weren't for the battle she had fought before this that drained her strength, now, she would have already rushed up.

Situ Ming, with one grab, pulled Li Yaoyao to a stop. His gaze swept Su Luo a glance in displeasure, and reproached Nangong Liuyun to say: "Third Junior Brother, control your woman."

Nangong Liuyun's dark red lips hooked into an indifferent shallow smile, and with a cold sneer, said: "Situ Ming, these words, without changing an iota, is gifted back to you."

Situ Ming fiercely glared at Nangong Liuyun.

He really wanted to teach this unbridled Third Junior Brother, who didn't put his seniors in his eyes, a lesson. However, his strength now simply wasn't a match for Nangong Liuyun.....

As a result, Situ Ming could only grin and bear it, as he turned his face away in rage.

Just at this moment, Beichen Ying and Zi Yan also followed after and climbed up the Swift Cloud Slope.

After one incense stick of time had passed, the Luo siblings also wearily climbed up. They laid on the sloping ground without the strength to lift even a finger.

Chapter 1079 – Swift Cloud Slope (6)

In mid-air, the turntable that everyone was familiar with appeared once again.

The black turntable continuously spun.

The first turntable rotating was spinning out Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo, this team's, score.

The two people before was always in last place.

This time, everyone's hopes for them wasn't high, so much that the corner of Li Yaoyao's mouth even hooked up into a disdainful smile, as she shot a taunting glance at Su Luo.

This Nine Different Palace Halls was competing on a team's strength.

No matter how great one person performed, that was only fifty points.

Based on Su Luo's broken body that would fall with one blow from the wind, how could she get a high score? Wasn't that ridiculous?

As a result, Li Yaoyao wasn't even worried.

That black turntable seemed to have a life of its own, and finally coming to a stop after a long time.

“Seventy-five points?!!!”

After seeing that score, Li Yaoyao shrieked loudly!

She suddenly jumped up, pointed to the sky and continuously raved: “This is impossible! How can they get seventy-five points?! Su Luo clearly didn't contribute! At most, it would be fifty points!!”

The corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked up slightly. Her gaze when looking at Li Yaoyao was full of mockery.

She didn't contribute?

This time, she actually contributed.

She just so happened to have gotten rid of that little golden-colored magical beast without a sound.

Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun allowed Li Yaoyao to act like a silly clown, jumping up, down and sideways.

Anyway, the score was decided by the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls, no one else could influence it.

Speaking of this, the judgement standards were quite fair.

Nangong Liuyun naturally got fifty points without a doubt.

Su Luo and the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox evenly split that fifty points, so adding Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun's points together, would be seventy-five points.

Very quickly, the second turntable appeared.

Zi Yan and Beichen Ying: sixty points.

The Luo siblings who were lying on the ground like a pair of worn out dead dogs: fifty points.

The fourth turntable appeared immediately after.

Li Yaoyao stared fixedly at that turntable.

This round, Situ Ming had to pay a disastrous price in order to kill that enormous golden-colored magical beast.

She also spent a tremendous effort, just to kill that smaller-sized golden-colored magical beast.

She just didn't believe, that she, Li Yaoyao, would lose to that sickly cheap girl.

The turntable continued to spin.

Very quickly, the tens place pointed to seven!

Li Yaoyao's heart suddenly was jolted, immediately followed by a burst of joy.

The tens place was seven, that was to say, her team should at least get seventy points or more.

Then, the ones place, how much was it?

Li Yaoyao, with rapt attention, held her breath, for fear that one exhaled breath from her would be too strong, that would displace the pointer on the turntable.

At this moment, not only Li Yaoyao, but the rest of the people were also attentively staring at the turntable in mid-air unblinkingly.

In the end, who would be first in this round?

That pointer for the ones position finally slowed down.

“Six, six, six!” Li Yaoyao waved her fists and loudly shouted!

Zi Yan was also angry and followed to shout out: “Four, four, four!”

That pointer whipped about before finally settling over one place.

“Ahh!!!” Zi Yan excitedly jumped up widely and rushed over, wanting to lift up Su Luo in the air.

Nangong Liuyun, with a quick change of hands, placed Su Luo on his back, not allowing Zi Yan to even touch her.

Zi Yan hugged empty air, but her excitement didn't disappear because of this.

Because that pointer, just like what she was shouting, stopped steadily on four.

In other words, Li Yaoyao's team only had seventy-four points.

Then, this challenge's winners were Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun!

Zi Yan and Beichen Ying embraced each other, excitedly cheering. They were more happy than getting the victory themselves.

Li Yaoyao's face was so dark that water could drip out.

Chapter 1080 – Swift Cloud Slope (7)

Li Yaoyao's face was so dark that water could drip out.

"It's not like you guys won, why be so excited?" Li Yaoyao coldly sneered.

The corner of Zi Yan's mouth hooked into a taunting smile, with a smile that was not a smile, she mocked: "Oh, Li Yaoyao, your face is truly ugly from jealousy, no wonder Third Senior Brother doesn't like you."

Zi Yan's eyes slightly ticked up, and shot a glance at Nangong Liuyun.

"Zi Yan, you're courting death!" Li Yaoyao was still in a rage, these words once again directly pierced through her inner heart.

"Have the ability, then come and bring it on, you think this young lady is afraid of you?" Zi Yan rolled up her sleeves, with an aggressive appearance, like a female hero.

Li Yaoyao was so furious that she wanted to rush up and have a huge fight with her.

However, Situ Ming made a move and pulled Li Yaoyao to a stop.

If they really started to fight, Li Yaoyao could not beat Zi Yan. Not to mention, behind Zi Yan stood a circle of people.

"Second Senior Brother, even you won't help me?" Li Yaoyao almost cried from being wronged.

Situ Ming took a deep breath, frowned, and coldly glared at Zi Yan: "Little Yan, Yaoyao is your junior sister. Forget that you as senior sister didn't help her and instead sided with outsiders, but now, to still help outsiders to bully her? Since when did you become a person like this?!"

Situ Ming's tone was not good, his face was even more displeased.

A trace of rage flashed through Zi Yan's eyes.

She had always been frank and outspoken, so this time was no exception: "Second Senior Brother, who's called outsiders? Even Third Senior Brother is an outsider? Third Sister-in-law is also an outsider? What do you call the things she, Li Yaoyao, did before, could it be you didn't see? Are your eyes only used as decorations?"

Zi Yan's words could be said to be very sharp. It immediately made Situ Ming become dumbfounded on the spot, not knowing how to react to her words.

Situ Ming never expected, this young and a little rash-headed fourth junior sister, would aim the spearhead at him. Moreover, every word was like pearls and unusually sharp.

"Pfft——" Beichen Ying couldn't bear it and laughed out loud. He really didn't do it on purpose.

"Who farted, really stinky!" Li Yaoyao pinched her nose and said it disdainfully.

Zi Yan cursed Situ Ming, so she would curse Beichen Ying. She didn't believe she couldn't beat her in cursing.

Who knew that Zi Yan's reaction would be very fast.

"What's so stinky about farts? Don't forget your stomach is stuffed with shit, how is it that it didn't stink you to death? Pretending to be a white lotus flower, for who to look at ah? Except for the guy at your side with eyes as decorations, who can't see through you clearly ah?" Zi Yan, with her hands on her hips, shouted abuse like a fishwife.

While cursing, she unconsciously fell into an excited state, this was what kind of fluent mocking to curse so freely.

Directly striking Li Yaoyao's face, making it look bad.

"You.....How can you be like this!" Compared to Zi Yan's quick mind, Li Yaoyao seemed even more inferior.

After all, she had always played the role of a fairy in the past, how could she be skilled in curse words?

As a result, for the second meeting, Li Yaoyao couldn't go on and was directly defeated.

“What kind of person am I? Would I go insincerely pretending to be pure and honest? Would I still stubbornly hold on to a person with a death grip whom I clearly knew didn't like me? Would I use a person until he dies even though I know I don't like him? Li Yaoyao, saying you are cheap is an insult to the word cheap! You simply aren't worthy of it!”

Zi Yan cursed until her heart was content with scattered words of wisdom.

It was only a pity that Li Yaoyao's experience was too few, she was flushed with anger from being cursed. Her eyes were opened wide, glowering, but could not find the words to curse back.

“Zi Yan, shut your mouth!” Situ Ming finally couldn't bear to watch it anymore, and using his status as a senior, angrily shouted.

Zi Yan coldly snorted, and turned around to walk away.

She didn't shut up because she listened to Situ Ming's words, rather, the words poor Li Yaoyao wasn't worthy to be her opponent. Cursing there alone made her look like a fishwife shouting abuse in the streets.

Seeing Zi Yan walk to Su Luo's side, a trace of displeasure flashed through Situ Ming's eyes.

Just at this moment——

Chapter 1081 – Plant Essence (1)

Just at this moment.

Two objects suspended in mid-air flew towards Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun.

Su Luo looked at the object she received that was in her hand, and her eyebrows slightly twitched.

This was a crystal that gave off a green light like the luster of a gem, issuing a thriving vitality that was given off by nature.

“What is this?” Su Luo asked in puzzlement.

She had never seen this kind of thing before.

When she saw this green-colored crystal, the Acacia Tree in her space moved slightly.

Because in the last battle, the Variant Acacia Tree had tried to help Su Luo and received Fairy Yan Xia’s attack, up till now, it had remained unconscious.

Now, it actually moved.

Although it was only a slight movement, Su Luo was still sincerely excited.

Nangong Liuyun carefully took a glance at it, a thread of surprise flashing through his water-tossed eyes.

“Useless.” He faintly said, giving his verdict.

“Useless?” How could it be useless? The Variant Acacia Tree in her space was already struggling to climb out.

“This is Millennium-old Plant Essence. No matter how heavily injured a Variant plant spirit pet is, as long as it absorbs this Millennium-old Plant Essence, it can be restore to its original state.” Nangong Liuyun’s expression was unenthusiastic, his voice was clear and cold like water, “Keep it, in the

future, I'll go find a Variant plant spirit pet for you.”

Once Nangong Liuyun said these words, Su Luo and Zi Yan exchanged a glance, with expressions of not knowing whether to laugh or cry in the depths of their eyes.

“Third Senior Brother, could it be that you don't know? Luo Luo has already subdued a Variant Acacia Tree!” Zi Yan felt that it was very coincidental.

This Millennium-old Plant Essence could only be used on the body of a Variant plant spirit pet. Moreover, it just so happened that Su Luo had such a Variant plant spirit pet in her hands.

Su Luo's expression was even more strange.

Because what Zi Yan thought was a coincidence was not the real coincidence.

The most coincidental thing was that last time, her Variant Acacia Tree was shaken into pieces by Fairy Yan Xia, and its body had received serious injuries!

Now, this Millennium-old Plant Essence was like being given a pillow when dozing off, just right, okay?

However, was there really such a coincidence? Could it be that the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls had known that she needed this Millennium-old Plant Essence, so he deliberately gave it to her?

Su Luo couldn't understand it after much thought, so she just tossed it aside, not paying more attention to it.

The her right now was all smiles with her palms spread out. A less-than-half-of-thirty -centimeters smaller version of the Variant Acacia Tree appeared in the center of her palm.

This smaller version of the Variant Acacia Tree's leaves were dried up and yellow. Its trunks were cracked like dried firewood, looking as if it was about to die at any moment.

“How do you use this?” Su Luo lifted her eyes, so clear and limpid as they looked at Nangong Liuyun.

Even Nangong Liuyun was speechless.

How could it be so coincidental?

However, his family's Luo Luo had always had heaven defying good luck, so this scene in front of his eyes couldn't be considered as too much.

"I'll do it." Nangong Liuyun pinched Su Luo's Millennium-old Plant Essence into pieces.

Tiny green fluorescent lights, just like flower fairies skipping about, flew quickly to enter the wilted Variant Acacia Tree's body.

For a moment, the spirit light in the surroundings dispersed, like specks of starlight.

Su Luo, with rapt attention, held her breath, staring at the Variant Acacia Tree, unable to take her eyes off of it, afraid another change would occur.

At this time, Li Yaoyao couldn't help but to take a few steps closer, with a focused expression, staring at the tree.

Not long after, the leaves of the Variant Acacia Tree that was close to withering, actually, at a speed that the naked eye could see, from dried up yellow, changed to orange. Then, it turned into a tender yellow, and finally changed into a lush lovely green.

Abundant green color full of life.

This scene, was like time flowing backwards, white hair turning to black, dried up yellow turning to green.....

This magical scene, made everyone stare in awe.

"How miraculous is this Millennium-old Plant Essence....." Zi Yan's eyes were nearly straight from watching in amazement.

"Simply like bringing the dead back to life, resurrected from death!" Beichen Ying sincerely praised.

Chapter 1082 – Plant Essence (2)

“Don’t tell me you guys think this is the climax?” Nangong Liuyun smiled slightly, “No, this is just the beginning.”

Nangong Liuyun still had another Millennium-old Plant Essence in his hand.

Li Yaoyao, seeing this, her red lips parted slightly, wanting to say something but hesitating: “Third Senior Brother....”

She also had a plant spirit pet, which was also about to mutate, if Third Senior Brother gave this Millennium-old Plant Essence to her.....

However, Li Yaoyao was also afraid that Nangong Liuyun wouldn’t agree, so she anxiously and pitifully looked towards Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun frowned slightly.

However, this displeasure flashed by quickly, soon after, he pretended as if he had not heard Li Yaoyao’s voice, continuing with what he was about to do.

But, Li Yaoyao’s lips that were pursed tightly, loosened.

“Third Senior Brother, this Millennium-old Plant Essence in your hand, can you maybe, maybe...” Li Yaoyao hesitated, with a wavering appearance.

If switched to other people, seeing this pitiful appearance of Li Yaoyao’s, certainly, without saying another word, they would have given it to her.

Situ Ming also felt that at this time, he ought to give it to her. When all was said and done, Nangong Liuyun was still Li Yaoyao’s senior brother, although he was normally very sarcastic,.

Nangong Liuyun held the Millennium-old Plant Essence, and passed it slightly forward.

Li Yaoyao’s expression suddenly became delighted!

Just when she reached out to receive it, Nangong Liuyun's hands brushed past hers.

At the same time, he handed the Millennium-old Plant Essence into Su Luo's hand.

"It's said that using it a second time, could trigger the second transformation of a variant plant, your luck has always been good, come, let's try it."

"Really?" Su Luo's eyes suddenly brightened.

A variant plant's second transformation? Then, not only would her Acacia Tree be restored to its original strength, but its skills would also increase dramatically?

"Come, try it." Nangong Liuyun tenderly looked at her with a smile in his eyes, full of indulgent love.

The two people talked as if nobody else was around, Li Yaoyao was like a statue that could be ignored in their eyes.

This kind of being coldly ignored was more hurtful than any malicious language.

Li Yaoyao was stumped for words on the spot....

The fists at her sides were clenched tightly, her sharp nails ruthlessly pinched into her skin, specks of blood flowing out.

But she couldn't feel the pain.

Because her heart was in the most pain.

That place seemed to have been pierced through by a sharp sword, that was then ruthlessly pulled out again, so painful that she almost suffocated.

Li Yaoyao's face was horribly pale.

Her body swayed, and was almost about to fall.

Situ Ming hurriedly protected her by hugging her, he nervously looked at her, and anxiously asked: "Yaoyao, are you okay? Is it serious?"

Li Yaoyao's pair of eyes were tightly closed, tears silently flowed, rolling down endlessly. Her lips were pursed until they became a straight line, repeatedly

trembling.

Situ Ming lifted his eyes up, with a remote and cold gaze that directly shot towards Nangong Liuyun: “You went too far!”

Nangong Liuyun indifferently raised an eyebrow, with a smile that was not quite a smile, he said.: “Where did I go too far? In front of my family’s treasured wife’s face, you say it clearly ah.”

Situ Ming was stuffed up, but just at this time, Li Yaoyao pulled Situ Ming back.

“Second Senior Brother, don’t say anything anymore, I beg you not to say anything anymore...” She was already humiliated like this, if Third Senior Brother was allowed to continue saying things, then she....

Li Yaoyao felt a burst of astringent meaning attack her heart, gripping it painfully.

“Humph!” Situ Ming heavily humphed, and carried Li Yaoyao to walk outside of this circle.

Su Luo watched Li Yaoyao’s back, the corner of her mouth lifting up in a ridiculing smile.

She shook her head, and began to concentrate on the work in her hand.

Su Luo pinched that Millennium-old Plant Essence into pieces, and let the green fluorescent light continue to sprinkle on the Variant Acacia Tree.

Chapter 1083 – Plant Essence (3)

One could see those light green tender leaves of the Variant Acacia Tree, quickly turn into a dark green color.

Afterwards, a thick layer of fog surrounded the Variant Acacia Tree like a cocoon, so thick that people couldn't see what was going on inside. One could only feel the spirit energy of heaven and earth rush into that thick layer of fog.

Gradually, the thick fog dispersed.

When everyone saw it once again, they couldn't help but be gobsmacked.

The Variant Acacia Tree's originally dark green leaves had turned into a golden color, giving off a dazzling luster.

Right now, it continuously grew longer and thicker.

It's tough thick vines extended unbounded in all directions, as if it would never stop.

"Such a great formidable feeling ah!" Zi Yan exclaimed in surprise.

She could feel that fresh and pure spirit aura bursting out from the Variant Acacia Tree.

All of a sudden, Luo Haochen's eyes lit up!

"Spirit Gathering Tree!" Luo Haochen cried out in surprise, "This is a Spirit Gathering Tree!!"

What's a Spirit Gathering Tree? Su Luo was extremely puzzled.

She had never even heard of it.

However, the rest of the people's eyes exploded out with brilliant radiance, hot as sunlight.

Su Luo's heart became a little scared from being stared by them.

“What are you guys doing?” Su Luo looked at Beichen Ying's hungry-as-a-wolf's gaze and weakly asked.

“Sister-in-law! Spirit Gathering Tree ah! Don't tell me you have never heard of a Spirit Gathering Tree?!” Beichen Ying wished he could shake her by the shoulders.

Spirit Gathering Tree ah, this was a real Spirit Gathering Tree!

Which clan, which huge influential power, didn't want to have a Spirit Gathering Tree? Having a Spirit Gathering Tree was equivalent to possessing a bright future.

When Su Luo's doubtful gaze turned towards Nangong Liuyun, Nangong Liuyun only revealed a bitter smile.

That's right, Su Luo indeed succeeded, her luck that defied nature, made the Variant Acacia Tree transform two times.

But her luck was really too good, excessively so!!!

Not only did she bring about the Variant Acacia Tree's second transformation, but she also made it transform a third time!

A plant spirit pet that could transform three times, in this entire world, it was unique, one of a kind.

“You.....”

“You.....”

Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo started to talk at the same time.

Su Luo wanted to ask, but she didn't know how to ask.

Nangong Liuyun wanted to explain, but he had no idea on how to explain it.

This Variant Acacia Tree transformed into a Spirit Gathering Tree, it was way, way outside of Nangong Liuyun's expectations.

If he knew the result would be this, he certainly would be more low-key and search for a place without anyone else for Su Luo to secretly transform her Variant Acacia Tree. Rather than right now, in front of everyone, to expose this

treasure.

Nangong Liuyun forced a smile and touched his nose: “Luo Luo, this Spirit Gathering Tree has the exact meaning as its name.”

Exact meaning as its name? Could it be that her Spirit Gathering Tree could gather spirit force?

“Yes, the Spirit Gathering Tree can absorb the energies of heaven and earth within a certain range. Afterwards, it would turn the energies into spirit force and discharge it.” Nangong Liuyun slowly said this, stressing each word, “In other words, cultivating under a Spirit Gathering Tree, the result will be a bit faster.”

A bit faster in speed was just the low end of the theory.

In fact, places with Spirit Gathering Trees, the cultivation speed would be multiplied by many folds.

For example, regardless of how strong an expert, all of them needed to absorb the energies of heaven and earth, then through cultivation, they would transform it into spirit force.

However, a Spirit Gathering Tree could automatically transform the energies, and the person cultivating only needed to absorb it.

This kind of treasure that defied natural order, was now in Su Luo’s palm.

Nangong Liuyun’s gaze swept over the four people on the opposing team.

His eyes were ink-black with hidden depths, abstruse like the ocean, and enigmatic, no one could see clearly the meaning in his eyes.

Chapter 1084 – Plant Essence (4)

If Nangong Liuyun wanted to kill them, it would be as easy as a turn of his hands, therefore, it's best for them to keep a low profile.

Although Nangong Liuyun didn't say it openly, Su Luo could clearly see the reaction of the people around her. She had already understood what a hot potato this Spirit Gathering Tree was.

Now, in this Nine Different Palace Halls, the greed in the depths of these people's eyes was undoubtedly revealed.

If they got out of Xian's Wood Residence....Su Luo suddenly felt her scalp go numb.

"How could it transform into a Spirit Gathering Tree? Simply incomprehensible ah." Beichen Ying saw the atmosphere was awkward, so he started to jest.

Zi Yan was also puzzled: "Theoretically, it shouldn't do it on the second transformation, okay? How could it directly skip to the third step? Luo Luo, your luck is really too....."

Zi Yan wanted to say that she had good luck, but then, thought of how hot this Spirit Gathering Tree was. So temporarily, she didn't know if she ought to say whether Su Luo's luck was good or bad.

The Su Luo right now was exceedingly speechless.

She secretly guessed, it couldn't be because the Variant Acacia Tree had stayed in her space for a long time, so was smoothed over by the spirit force in her space, thereby causing this time's sudden change?

At this moment, Luo Haochen's gaze stealthily sized up the Spirit Gathering Tree that made his heart leap in excitement and fear.

He swore, no matter what methods he had to use, he must have that Spirit Gathering Tree.

Through this, his Luo family would rise up in this world, and sit on the throne among the great powers!

This was his family's wish for hundreds and thousands years, maybe it could be achieved in his hands.

Just when he let his imagination roam, Nangong Liuyun's gaze fell on his body.

Luo Haochen only felt his heart jump wildly, in a split second, his gaze turned away.

Nangong Liuyun's icy sneer, made him feel as if he was dropped into an ice cellar.

Luo Haochen turned his face away and avoided Nangong Liuyun's eyes, then, he buried the greed in his eyes in the deepest part of his heart.

Who wouldn't want a Spirit Gathering Tree? Which family would be willing to give up such a temptation so easily?

Li Yaoyao originally was jealous of Su Luo, so jealous that she nearly went insane. But now, her eyes had malicious rays of light that roamed around.

She knew, as long as she got out, Su Luo would die for sure.

Nangong Liuyun gently patted Su Luo's shoulder: "It's nothing, I will always be here with you."

Su Luo faintly smiled: "I know."

She knew, this matter, Nangong Liuyun had his own resolution. Therefore, these troublesome things would be given over to him to handle properly.

Su Luo, in passing, collected the Variant Acacia Tree.

Now, this Variant Acacia Tree had already changed its name to be called Spirit Gathering Tree.

The scene changed, the eight people had already arrived at the fourth challenge.

The fourth challenge of the Nine Different Palace Halls.

This was a vast grassland.

As far as the eye could see, everything was green. An endless green that unfolded on a grand scale.

Su Luo and the others searched for a long time, and couldn't find any trace of magical beasts.

Then, in the end, what was the rule for this challenge? What would be regarded as passing?

At this moment, a huge question mark hung above everyone's heads.

Just when everyone was still puzzled, a pitch-black human face suddenly appeared in mid-air.

The human face was very large, nearly taking up more than half of the horizon.

“Ha ha ha ha ha——little lady, never expected that your luck is this good. Two Millennium-old Plant Essences are able to raise a Spirit Gathering Tree that hadn't appeared in the world! In the future, you just wait to be chased all over the world to be killed ah, ha ha ha——”

Su Luo's eyes wrinkled.

Her heart was already extremely gloomy, and this master of the Nine Different Palace Halls actually still ran over to taunt her? Still saying she would be chased all over the world to be killed?

However, fortunately, after the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls had finished making fun of her, he then returned to the main topic: “The requirement for the fourth challenge is very simple. In this vast grassland, you must find Frost Grass within the stipulated time, the more the better!

He had just finished speaking, not waiting for these people to ask, his smiling face had already disappeared into the horizon.

Chapter 1085 – Plant Essence (5)

“Hey! How long is the stipulated time?!” Zi Yan jumped up and wanted to ask for clarification, but that person’s face had already disappeared cleanly.

Beichen Ying spread out his hands: “Forget it, in any case, everyone has same amount of time, we aren’t at a disadvantage.”

“We can only console ourselves this way.” Zi Yan sighed, “But Frost Grass? What is Frost Grass anyway?”

Not only Zi Yan, but even the four people on Li Yaoyao’s side also had this question.

Su Luo’s eyes stared intently at the grass in the surrounding.

After a cup of tea’s time, Su Luo walked forward, and from the grassy field, pulled out a finger-length green grass leaf: “Look, this is it.”

Su Luo explained, “Frost Grass, according to records in the ancient books, is a kind of medical grass that can withstand miasmatic aura. It only grows in the extreme northern grasslands, very rare. It can grow up to two thumbs width in length, with leaves that are no different than common weeds. It’s very hard for people to find.”

“What ‘very difficult for people to find’? It is simply impossible to find, okay? They are simply growing among the weeds ah.” Zi Yan frustratedly had her hands on her forehead.

It was no different than ordinary weeds and only two thumbs width long, growing among the weeds, and was still very rare. Who the f*ck could find it?

Su Luo spread out her hands: “We can only search for it inch by inch.”

Using spirit power, to search inch by inch was the simplest and most effective method.

At this time, not waiting for Su Luo to speak, Li Yaoyao's side of four people had already teamed up to search in a row.

"We'll go a bit farther."

Nangong Liuyun picked up Su Luo, within a few steps' time, he had already disappeared in place.

Zi Yan depressedly grabbed her hair: "Don't know what craziness that master of the Nine Different Palace Halls is thinking. What's the point of searching for Frost Grass? I would rather fight with monsters!"

"At least searching for this Frost Grass won't injure us. Also, Su Luo has a little bit of advantage." Beichen Ying pulled her to leave with quick steps: "Nangong Liuyun's group went east, then we'll go north, quickly, let's go, let's go."

Speaking of Su Luo's side.

When she opened her eyes again, in the surroundings, there was only Nangong Liuyun that remained.

"No need to rush." Nangong Liuyun gave a demonically charming smile and his sleeves waved.

Immediately, two chairs and a low table appeared on the leveled ground.

On the short table, there was even a simmering pot of green tea. The green tea released a rich aroma.

"Come, have a taste of this Fairy Tea." Nangong Liuyun leisurely called out to Su Luo.

That action, that expression, so leisurely as if vacationing in another of his mansions, rather than with their life on the line in Xian's Wood Residence's Nine Different Palace Halls.

Su Luo was angered till she laughed.

"Now is at a critical moment, you are still in the mood to drink tea?"

Just now, during the third challenge, it was how thrilling and how stimulating?

If Li Yaoyao got two more points, that Millennium-old Plant Essence would have ended up in her hands.

“A competition where success is within grasp, what’s there to be nervous about? Sit down.” Nangong Liuyun’s hand pressed down and Su Luo sat on the soft chair.

“Success within grasp?” Su Luo’s eyes narrowed slightly. How was it that she didn’t know that success was within grasp?

If there was only Nangong Liuyun by himself, then naturally, success was within grasp, but adding her, then there would be many more variables.

“Come, have a taste of this Fairy Tea, outsiders won’t have the chance to drink it.” Nangong Liuyun skillfully bathed the tea, brewed the tea and finally poured a small cup full of tea. Then, he personally held the cup to the edge of Su Luo’s lips.

Since Nangong Liuyun was so confident, what was there for Su Luo to worry about?

Letting his white-as-jade, long slender fingers hold it, she drank that cup of Fairy Tea.

Worthy of being called Fairy Tea.

Only one mouthful, Su Luo could feel the suffocating air in her heart and lungs all disappear, and it felt calm and stress-free.

Even her mouth was full of a refreshing fragrance.

Chapter 1086 – Plant Essence (6)

“How is it?” A soft light drifted through Nangong Liuyun’s starry pupils.

“Not bad.” What’s not bad, this was simply the best tea Su Luo had ever had in both lifetimes.

Moreover, Su Luo also faintly felt, as the Fairy Tea flowed into her stomach, a warm heat from her pubic region slowly flowed up to roam all over.

More and more spirit energy amassed in her body, unfortunately, her body was really bad, unable to complete the breakthrough.

The two people leisurely and comfortably drank tea.

Time passed, minute by minute.....

“You actually stayed calm.” Nangong Liuyun’s eyes glittered with light, giving voice to light laughter.

“Doesn’t everything have you to take care of it? Why should I worry?” Su Luo smilingly looked at him, freely saying so.

Nangong Liuyun was beaming with joy, for a moment, his mood was extremely good.

With this unconditional trust.

“Since it’s like this, then I can’t let you be disappointed.” Nangong Liuyun put down his teacup and said to Su Luo, “Want to find Frost Grass, for them, it’s very difficult. However, for you, it’s simply too easy.”

“Oh?” A light flashed in Su Luo’s eyes.

Could it be that she still had an advantage in this challenge?

“Don’t tell me that it’s the Spirit Gathering Tree?” Su Luo’s eyes lit up as she immediately understood.

“It’s precisely the Spirit Gathering Tree.” Nangong Liuyun nodded his head, “You let the Spirit Gathering Tree out, then afterwards, sit and wait to pull up the net.”

Sit and wait to pull up the net? Could it be that Nangong thought her Spirit Gathering Tree could fish?

Although she silently disagreed in her head, however, Su Luo still was very trusting of Nangong Liuyun.

Su Luo summoned out the Spirit Gathering Tree.

At this moment, all the branches and leaves on the Spirit Gathering Tree were a dark golden color, it glistened brightly in the sunlight. Its brilliance dazzled the eyes.

At this moment, the Spirit Gathering Tree seemed to have too much spirit power that it couldn’t release.

Su Luo gave a command, and the Spirit Gathering Tree then eagerly ran into the underbrush.

This Spirit Gathering Tree ran very fast when it was still a Variant Acacia Tree, now, after its second transformation, that speed was even more astonishing.

With a few ‘whoosh, whoosh’ sounds, one already couldn’t see its figure.

Seeing this, Nangong Liuyun’s thin lips curled up slightly: “This Nine Different Palace Halls’ reward can barely be considered passable. It’s a pity to let it run off.”

Finished speaking, he stood up and said to Su Luo: “You sit here properly, don’t go anywhere, understand?”

“Ok.” Su Luo smiled.

With the Spirit Gathering Tree running around helping her to collect the grass, she naturally was happy to be idle.

Only, she hadn’t tried it before, so didn’t know if the Spirit Gathering Tree could do it or not. If it really could do it, then in the future, when she went to collect medicinal herbs, then it would certainly be more convenient.

Su Luo thought, being pleased with herself.

Time gradually passed.

Nanong Liuyun, once left, didn't return.

The Spirit Gathering Tree had also run so far that it had disappeared without a trace.

Just when Su Luo was bored to the point of about to doze off, a few figures appeared in front of her.

Even though Su Luo's body was seriously injured, her vigilance was still very strong.

She opened her eyes and looked at the people before her with a cold gaze.

Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming.

Weren't the two of them on the west side? Why did they run over here?

Su Luo sat on the chair without batting an eyelid, indifferently drinking the tea and didn't pay them any heed.

Li Yaoyao walked a few steps closer, pulled out the chair and sat in Nanong Liuyun's previous seat.

"You are so leisurely." Li Yaoyao mockingly gazed at Su Luo, the intent to kill secretly rushing forcefully into her eyes.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked up in a shallow smile: "Does Miss Li have an objection?"

In Li Yaoyao's eyes, there was a murderous, cold intent: "Su Luo, you are still as arrogant as before. Believe it or not, now, with just a slap from my palm, I can kill you?"

In fact, Li Yaoyao's words were not false, based on her current strength, to deal with Su Luo, she didn't need to use a slap. One of her fingers could crush her to death.

However, Su Luo only smiled shallowly.

Chapter 1087 – Plant Essence (7)

“Miss Li, you want to move against me?” Su Luo slanted a glance at her as if she was looking at an idiot.

A thread of rage flashed through Li Yaoyao’s eyes!

“You really believe I won’t dare to kill you?” Li Yaoyao’s body leaned forward, leaning close to Su Luo. She slowly and deliberately said it in a threatening manner.

“That’s right, you wouldn’t dare.” Su Luo’s expression was full of smiles.

Situ Ming, in an ice cold manner, gazed at Su Luo: “Miss Su, give some thought to your life, speak fewer words.”

Even Situ Ming believed that if Li Yaoyao wanted to kill Su Luo, that it would be an extremely easy matter.

The corner of Li Yaoyao’s mouth revealed lights of victory.

She proudly raised an eyebrow with the posture of a victorious person on top: “If you beg me, then I may let you live.”

Who would have thought that Su Luo would laugh out loud with a ‘pfft’ sound.

“What are you laughing at?!” Li Yaoyao slapped the table in a rage, “You really think I won’t dare to kill you?”

Li Yaoyao extended her arm and was just about to pinch Su Luo’s neck.

If Su Luo was pinched by her, based on her current weak body, everything truly pointed to disaster.

A strange malicious luster flashed through Li Yaoyao’s eyes.

If she could kill Su Luo, then it couldn’t be better!

“Yaoyao, stop!” Situ Ming’s eyes were swift with quicker hands. With one grab, he pulled Li Yaoyao’s hand to a stop.

“Second Senior Brother!” Both of Li Yaoyao’s hands were imprisoned, and she couldn’t help but to glower at Situ Ming.

Situ Ming had no choice: “If you kill her, you think Nangong Liuyun will let you go?”

Everyone knew Nangong Liuyun cherished Su Luo to the utmost.

If anyone dared to touch a single one of Su Luo’s hair, that would definitely be a disaster on the level of exterminating the entire family. Why would Yaoyao still not understand this even till now?

If Situ Ming hadn’t mentioned it, then good, but once he said it, the jealousy and anger in Li Yaoyao’s eyes flourished even more!

“Second Senior Brother, let go now! If I don’t make a move now, then there won’t be an opportunity in the future! Third Senior Brother is not here, who would know it was us that did it?!” Li Yaoyao said this and again tried to rush up.

“Yaoyao! Why do you still obstinately persist in going about things the wrong way, even now? If Su Luo really dies here, no matter who is the murderer, everyone, without exception, will be massacred by Nangong Liuyun, do you understand or not!”

Situ Ming was so angry that even the muscles on his face trembled!

Li Yaoyao bit her lower lip, and very fiercely glared at Su Luo.

Li Yaoyao originally didn’t believe it, but Situ Ming’s gaze was unprecedentedly serious. The warning in his eyes gave Li Yaoyao no choice but to believe it.

No wonder this little slut was so confident that she wouldn’t dare make a move against her, so it was because of this!

“Humph! Consider this your lucky day!” Li Yaoyao, with a wave of her hand, that teapot containing the Fairy Tea fell down with a clang sound.

At the same time——

Two snow-white colored balls leapt towards that Fairy Tea at the speed of light!

The teapot was snatched away by the little divine dragon before it landed on the ground.

The little divine dragon held the teapot with both paws, with 'glup' sounds he poured it into his belly. That expression was one of extreme satisfaction.

On the side, the little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox stood up on tiptoes, running around the little divine dragon in circles. Its whole face was full of anxiety and longing, with its nine little tails impatiently waving to and fro.

However, the little divine dragon didn't have the slightest concept of being affectionate towards the young, so he lifted the teapot up high, drinking it and enjoying himself to the fullest.

"Awoo awoo——" The little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox was shorter than the little divine dragon, it was still shorter than the little divine dragon even on tiptoes.

She could only helplessly use her two little paws to grab the little divine dragon's claw and continuously try to pull it down to her chin while cutely wailing 'awoo, awoo'.

The little divine dragon swatted away her little paws and continued to drink.

"Awoo awoo——" The little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox was so anxious that tears nearly fell out.

Finally, the little divine dragon, saw that there was only a mouthful left, before reluctantly handing the teapot over to the little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox. He even patted her small head in passing.

Chapter 1088 – Plant Essence (8)

Wherefore would the little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox still care about his loathsome paw on her head, now, all her attention was on that Fairy Tea.

The little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox raised the teapot with both hands, tasting it drop by drop, in an exceedingly cherishing manner.

Seeing these two adorable jade-like snow-white spirit pets, Li Yaoyao almost went insane from jealousy!

So adorable, really wanted to steal them and take them home to raise.

Thinking this way, the movement of her hands also wasn't slow.

However, when her evil hands stretched out towards the little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox—— The little thing thought Li Yaoyao wanted to fight over the Fairy Tea with her!

The little fox, that was protecting her food, jumped up with an 'awoo' howl, with a little face that was stretched taut and strict. That little claw aggressively tapped towards Li Yaoyao's forehead!

In theory, the little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's strength wasn't that much stronger than Li Yaoyao. However, Li Yaoyao couldn't defend against its quickness, since it was an expert at speed.

Let alone the fact that Li Yaoyao simply wasn't guarded against it in any way.

So, in this way, Li Yaoyao ate a huge loss.

Just when the little fox's small claws tapped towards Li Yaoyao's forehead——

Our exceedingly refined Jade Lake's fairy suddenly, in a split second, was turned into a little lamb!

A little lamb that was lying on its stomach on the ground, nibbling on grass!

Su Luo stared with eyes open wide, she was so flabbergasted that her mind was in chaos.

Situ Ming had his mouth opened wide in shock, simply didn't know how he should react.

The Jade Lake's fairy that had returned to her senses was about to collapse!

"Baa! Baa! Baa!" The Jade Lake's fairy waved her hooves and was about to rush up.

However, she had just been turned into a four-legged animal, our Jade Lake's Fairy still hadn't adapted to this new form. So, using her hands and feet, she made the mistake of using it all at the same time.

With a 'splat' sound, the elegant and refined Jade Lake's fairy fell down in place. No matter what, she couldn't climb up.

"Hahahahaha——" Su Luo couldn't hold it back anymore, she hammered the ground and laughed her head off. She laughed so hard that tears almost came out.

It was really too funny! Li Yaoyao actually had a day like this!

Su Luo wiped at her tears and, with great difficulty, she restrained her laughter.

However, when she lifted her eyes up, and once again saw that lamb-shaped Jade Lake's fairy, as a result, the laughter she had restrained with great difficulty once again erupted!

Situ Ming's entire face was black.

Black as the bottom of a pot!

Only, at this moment, he didn't dare act blindly without thinking.

Because he didn't know the secret to the Transform into Sheep Technique.

He didn't know whether this Transform into Sheep Technique was temporary or permanent, fearing the unknown, consequently, he didn't dare to rashly make a move against Su Luo.

However, even if he was to make a move, Su Luo might not necessarily lose to

him.

Because Su Luo had two spirit pets present at her side.

The little divine dragon had considerable strength, at that time, he played tricks on Li Yaoxiang. Now, he wouldn't necessarily be unable to defeat Situ Ming.

What's more, there was still a little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox that could change a person into a lamb at any time.

"Su Luo! In the end, what are you doing? Hurry up and change Yaoyao back!" Situ Ming took a few steps forward to help the lamb-shaped Li Yaoyao up.

That fall from just now, nearly fractured the lamb's legs and feet.

Su Luo, with great difficulty, stopped laughing and stammeringly said: "You don't think, this kind of Jade Lake's fairy is quite docile and cute in comparison?"

Changed her into a sheep and to go as far as to still say she was docile and cute? Li Yaoyao was so angry that she almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

Situ Ming glared furiously at Su Luo: "When all is said and done, are you going to change her back or not? Don't force me!"

Su Luo, usually, when she hesitated to do something, was even less likely to do it when forced, she only did it with soft persuasion and never orders.

Originally, she still wanted to kindly inform him that when time was up, the Jade Lake's fairy would change back from a lamb into a person.

However, since Situ Ming threatened her, humph humph, think she was a big fool that would be easily scared?

"If you have the ability, then try it." Su Luo waved her hand, and the two little spirit pets jumped on her shoulder, with one on the right and the other on the left.

Chapter 1089 – Plant Essence (9)

Seeing those two small spirit pets on Su Luo's shoulder glaring like tigers watching their prey, Situ Ming stopped.

Although those two spirit pets were only palm-sized, their strength, however, was extraordinarily formidable. Even he wouldn't necessarily win against them.

Just now, if Yaoyao had moved her hand, very likely, now, she wouldn't even have her hands.....

Thinking of this, Situ Ming's heart was slightly horrified.

He never would have imagined, this little girl who seemingly would collapse with a blow of the wind, actually had this kind of strength. She really concealed it deeply without revealing anything.

Situ Ming gave a cold snort.

Just at this moment, two people flew over from the direction facing them.

These two people weren't any other people, they were Beichen Ying and Zi Yan.

The two people had searched for half a day and didn't find many, afterwards, Beichen Ying slapped his forehead.

"We'll go look for Luo Luo, she'll certainly have a quicker way."

Don't ask Beichen Ying why he would think this way, this was just his intuition.

In his impression, this stuff that depends on luck, no one could beat Su Luo.

The two people clicked together and the pair flew towards the east.

"Eh, Second Senior Brother, why are you here?" Zi Yan saw Situ Ming and couldn't help but cry out in surprise.

Situ Ming gave a cold snort.

Seeing that terrible complexion on his face, Zi Yan originally wanted to ignore him, but she felt it was really strange.

Where was the Jade Lake's fairy who was always inseparable from Situ Ming?

"Where's Li Yaoyao?" Zi Yan glanced left and right, up and down, and just didn't see Li Yaoyao's figure. She couldn't help but be extremely curious.

When these words came out, Su Luo, with a 'pfft', laughed out loud.

Situ Ming's complexion was so dark it was almost like the night.

The little lamb in his arms was stirred up and restless, as if it was about to dash up to tear Zi Yan into pieces.

However, our heroic Zi Yan really didn't know that the Jade Lake's fairy was change into a little lamb ah.

She asked Situ Ming with very good intentions: "Second Senior Brother, you really tossed aside Li Yaoyao, that white lotus flower? Hey, didn't I say it, our Second Senior Brother's eyes were momentarily covered over with paste. Now, you finally pushed aside the clouds and mist to see the clear sky, right? You saw Li Yaoyao's true colors, right?"

"Baa! Baa! Baa!" The little lamb agitatedly and restlessly dug at the ground and furiously dug out a deep hole.

If it wasn't for Situ Ming tenaciously restraining Li Yaoyao, at this moment, she would already have turned into a hungry wolf.

"Hey, this little lamb is really cute, hahaha, it can even get angry! What is it angry about? Is it because it's hungry?"

Zi Yan, smiling happily, pulled out a stalk of grass and put it in front of the little lamb's mouth, teasing it.

Li Yaoyao was so angry that she was trembling from head to toe!

She was unexpectedly really being treated as a lamb!!!

"Wow, Little Shadow, you see, this sheep is even trembling, Do you think it has epilepsy?" Zi Yan made a big fuss.

If she wasn't certain that Zi Yan didn't know the truth, even Su Luo would think she was pretending.

This girl's expressions and exaggerated movements were extremely well done, simply brilliant ah.

Su Luo coughed lightly: "Zi Yan ah, where it is possible to let people off, one should spare them ah, you should say a little less ok."

Zi Yan was extremely puzzled: "What 'where it is possible to let people off, one should spare them'. This is a sheep ah, don't tell me you think this is Li Yaoyao ah?"

Su Luo once again let out a 'pfft' sound and couldn't help but to laugh out loud.

"What if I said she really is Li Yaoyao?" Su Luo said, laughing happily.

"Sister-in-law, you really love joking around, hahaha, haha——"

Beichen Ying hadn't finished laughing when that little lamb in front of him, with a speed that was visible to the naked eye..... changed into a person.

Moreover, this person was someone everyone was most familiar with, Li Yaoyao.

Beichen Ying's smile immediately stiffened at the corner of his mouth, momentarily, the corner of his mouth twitched.

"She..... She..... She is..... Cough cough cough....." Beichen Ying choked on his own saliva.

Chapter 1090 – Plant Essence (10)

Su Luo spread out both hands, with an ‘as expected’ appearance: “Didn’t I say so? She really is Li Yaoyao.”

“Pfft!!!” Beichen Ying recalled Li Yaoyao’s appearance from just now going ‘baa baa baa’. All of a sudden, he hammered the ground and howled with laughter!

Zi Yan also followed after to laugh with him.

The two people, held their stomachs and rolled around on the meadow like idiots, stammeringly shouting: “Ouch, I’m dying of laughter, I’m dying of laughter.....”

Li Yaoyao was so angry that her complexion turned red, so red that watery blood almost dripped out!

She, from childhood to adult, since she was born, had never been so disgraced like this!

“Su Luo! I’m going to stake it all with you!”

Li Yaoyao was like a bull, disregarding the consequences, she abruptly crashed towards Su Luo.

Her speed was very quick and her strength was also unprecedentedly huge!

If she was hit by Li Yaoyao, even a hundred Su Luos would be crushed into meat patty.

Just at this crucial moment, two white jade-like slender fingers with clear joints extended out.

With a casual slap!

Li Yaoyao was suddenly slapped to the point of being dizzy with blurred

vision, her buttocks sat down hard on the grassy meadow.

Nangong Liuyun appeared as if about to vent his fury. The expression in his eyes was menacing as he glared at Li Yaoyao in an ice-cold manner.

“You want to die?”

If she wanted to die, Nangong Liuyun absolutely wouldn't mind helping her to succeed.

Li Yaoyao raised her head, meeting those cold eyes that were like millennium-old frozen ice. For a split second, her entire body seemed to have been frozen.

A chilly gust slowly rose up from the soles of her feet.

It was as if a basin of ice water was poured over her head, in a flash, she sobered up.

Situ Ming took two steps forward, with a cold voice, he said: “This matter was not Yaoyao's fault alone, you might as well go ask your treasured Su Luo! See in the end what she really did!”

A soft breeze brushed past, the corner of Nangong Liuyun's gown under his jade belt flew up and over, being torn by the wind.

His ink-colored long hair hung down on his broad shoulders. His beautiful eyes hid a sinister charm.

“Ask Luo Luo?” Nangong Liuyun gave a sneer, with a gaze as if looking at an idiot, he cast a demeaning glance at Situ Ming.

“Even if my family's Luo Luo wanted to massacre all in the whole world, then it ought to be so. How could she possibly be wrong?”

Nangong Liuyun's gaze was cruel, untamed, and bloodthirsty, with a clear, cold empty tone that was well-known for being terrifying.

Once these words were out, immediately, everyone was dumbfounded.

The shielding of Su Luo's errors in covering it up, from Nangong Liuyun's words, the meaning was simply nakedly clear ah.

No matter what his family's treasured Luo Luo did, it was all correct as it should be.

If someone, because of this, was jealous and wanted to retaliate, then they all deserved to die and couldn't be forgiven.

Unyielding ah! Loving her to the point obtaining just one smile of hers, he would even fight the entire world, this was really.....

Beichen Ying secretly gave him a thumbs up!

Inferior, he was totally inferior to Nangong Liuyun, his second brother.

Situ Ming was stumped for words.

He originally believed that Nangong Liuyun ought to explain everything to the end, right? This time, Su Luo changed Li Yaoyao into a lamb, however you sliced it, she was in the wrong, right?

However, he did thousands, no, ten of thousands of calculations, no matter what, he couldn't calculate that Nangong Liuyun would be biased to the point of as it should be by right and completely unreasonable.

"You....." Situ Ming suddenly felt that his entire worldview was broken.

He completely didn't know how he ought to react.

Li Yaoyao was more obvious, directly passing out from being angered.

"Nangong Liuyun, you simply, simply....." Situ Ming simply didn't know what words he should use to describe this sinister and ruthless male.

Just when the atmosphere was tense, in the air, that huge person's shadow faintly appeared.

"Time's up, now hand in all of your Frost Grass."

The master of the Nine Different Palace Halls' tone carried a thread of mocking banter.

As if he was just hiding in the layers of cloud, with a gaze that saw through everything, watching them attentively as if watching a play.

Chapter 1091 – The Fifth Challenge (1)

This appearance of the Nine Different Palace Halls's master really reminded everyone that now was not the time to get angry.

Li Yaoyao sent a sinister glance at Su Luo and took out a handful of Frost Grass from her sleeve and went up to hand it in.

Situ Ming also didn't lag behind, he also had a whole bundle of Frost Grass.

Judging at a glance, the amount the two people collected couldn't be less than seventy.

Sure enough, the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls, with a sweep of his eyes, was able to determine the specific amount.

“Seventy-four? Your luck is not bad, unexpectedly, you two found a source of Frost Grass.”

Li Yaoyao's face was full of self-satisfaction.

If it wasn't for her finding a source of Frost Grass, how would they have the time to come here for revenge? Naturally, they had the confidence in their hearts ah.

Seventy-four stalks of Frost Grass, surveying among everyone before her, who could compare to hers?

Li Yaoyao felt that, this time, no matter what, she would win handily.

As expected.

Beichen Ying and Zi Yan's, in comparison, was pathetic. In total, they only took out thirty stalks.

These thirty stalks still cost them a tremendous amount of effort and difficulty before they had pulled it out.

Didn't expect that Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming had conveniently found a source of Frost Grass, simply made one angry from constantly comparing to other people.

After Beichen Ying and Zi Yan handed over the Frost Grass, they were like a pair of frosted over eggplants, with their heads hanging down.

The Luo siblings' performance this time also wasn't too good.

The two people, in order to get the unknown reward, could be said to have searched in a manner of staking their lives on it. However, the final result still didn't exceed people's expectations.

They turned in twenty-five stalks of Frost Grass.

As a result, the current scores were:

Li Yaoyao's team: 74;

Beichen Ying's team: 30;

Luo Haochen's team: 25;

The remaining was Su Luo's team.

"Su Luo, let's see, this time, how many you can take out!" Li Yaoyao's eyes were full of hatred!

She clearly saw that only Third Senior Brother went to search for it, Su Luo stayed leisurely in place, not moving a single step.

Just like this, the most they could get was fifty points!

Li Yaoyao thought in her heart, being pleased with herself, waiting to watch Su Luo eat a loss.

Nangong Liuyun opened his hand.

A bunch of Frost Grass was clenched in the center of his palm, not too many, not too little, exactly fifty stalks.

"I keep saying, no matter how great Third Senior Brother is, still can't get much more..."

Nangong Liuyun shot her an indifferent glance

Based on Nangong Liuyun's strength, if he wanted to pick a little more, it

wouldn't have been difficult at all, but the problem was, when he had plucked fifty stalks, he was unable to pick any more Frost Grass.

In this Nine Different Palace Halls, there was a formidable force in the dark, controlling everything.

“Haha, you only have fifty stalks, we win this challenge!” Li Yaoyao happily exclaimed.

Victory, apart from being able to get the reward. The most important thing was that she could suppress down over Su Luo's head.

This was the matter that made Li Yaoyao the happiest.

However, Su Luo, with a smile that was not quite one, laughed with joy: “You really feel that you have won?”

“You guys only have fifty stalks, this fact is arranged in front of your eyes. Don't tell me you think we are all blind?” Li Yaoyao gave a heavy snort!

Su Luo smiled some more, then she lightly lifted up her hand.

Very quickly, that Spirit Gathering Tree that could blind people's eyes ran over with jolting buttocks.

When Li Yaoyao saw that Spirit Gathering Tree, she directly stopped to stare foolishly.

She suddenly saw!

This Spirit Gathering Tree's enormous roots were condensed into four legs, even she felt inferior to that running speed!

This was not the most important point. The important point was that those huge tree leaves on that Spirit Gathering Tree, every leaf was wrapped around a single Frost Grass!

Li Yaoyao was struck dumb from seeing this.

Su Luo lightly coughed, that Spirit Gathering Tree then ran up to hand her the Frost Grass eagerly with jolting buttocks.

When it passed by Li Yaoyao's side, don't know if it was because it held a grudge. It rolled past like a gust of wind, nearly knocking down Li Yaoyao.

Chapter 1092 – The Fifth Challenge (2)

Once the Spirit Gathering Tree arrived, the dominant position that Li Yaoyao originally occupied was counterattacked in an instant.

The Spirit Gathering Tree also handed in fifty stalks of Frost Grass.

This was only because it was under restriction, so it could only pick this many. Otherwise, that amount could directly terrify Li Yaoyao to tears.

This challenge's scores had already been spun out by the turntable.

Li Yaoyao's team: 74 points;

Zi Yan's team: 30 points;

The Luo siblings: 25 points;

As for Su Luo's team, they didn't receive the full score everyone was expecting, rather, they got seventy-five points!

Because Su Luo didn't put in the effort, so twenty-five points were deducted from the score.

"Again, it only differed by one point!" Li Yaoyao's eyes nearly shot out flames.

Because the resulting score was exactly the same for this challenge as the last challenge.

Li Yaoyao's team: 74 points, and Su Luo's team was 75 points!

It was merely a difference of one point, and Li Yaoyao once again suffered a defeat.

Li Yaoyao's mood was simply like falling from the heavens into hell. Then, making two round trips from heaven to hell.

"Oh, not bad, not bad, you guys actually picked a full one hundred stalks, this

is the first in the hundreds and thousands of years that I have been around.” A trace of contemplation flashed across that enormous face in the sky, “Looks like I’d better reward this well.”

Even given a good reward!? Li Yaoyao almost went crazy from jealousy!

At this moment, everyone was impatiently staring at that enormous face.

Just at this time, two warm bands of light flashed by, and two chunks of stones appeared in the center of Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun’s palms, settling there steadily.

These were two chunks of fiery red stones.

“This is...” Su Luo felt that this stone seemed somewhat familiar.

Very quickly, she remembered where she had seen it before.

At that time, when Grandmaster Rong Yun was accepting disciples, it was exactly this kind of stone that he asked her and Li Yaoyao to find in the Demon cave.

Reportedly, it was called Fire Source Stones.

However, very clearly, the energies contained in these two chunks of stone were much stronger than those in the Fire Source Stones.

“This is the Fire Source Stone Essence!!!”

Without waiting for Su Luo to ask, Li Yaoyao had already cried out in surprise.

As a dual wood and fire elemental mage, as Jade Lake’s Li family’s most favored princess, Li Yaoyao clearly understood the strength of these two chunks of Fire Source Stone Essence more than anyone else.

If you must know, even extracting out the energies from one hundred chunks of Fire Source Stones wouldn’t be as much as the energies from one chunk of Fire Source Stone Essence.

Fire Source Stone’s value was already excessively high, it could clearly be seen how precious this chunk of Fire Source Stone Essence was!

The Fire Source Stone Essence, with regards to fire elemental mages, was a treasure they would exchange for with their lives.

Li Yaoyao's eyes were almost straight from staring, she wished she could rush up to snatch away these two treasures.

When Su Luo's hand touched this chunk of Fire Source Stone Essence, suddenly, that broken stone in her space that hadn't moved in a long time actually slowly flipped over.

At that time when Fairy Yan Xia was chasing to kill Su Luo, at the most critical moment, the little stone did not hesitate to destroy his own cultivation in order to burn Fairy Yan Xia. Thus, giving valuable time for Su Luo to jump into the river.

Also, because of this, the little stone sank into a coma.

Su Luo had experimented many times, but it gave absolutely no reaction. Now, it reacted to this chunk of Fire Source Stone Essence?

With a flip of Su Luo's hand, that chunk of Fire Source Stone Essence had already entered her space.

Since Nangong Liuyun had already revealed his space bag, Su Luo had no need to cover up the matter of her own space.

It seemed to everyone that Su Luo certainly also had a space bag.

When this chunk of Fire Source Stone Essence landed in her space, it rolled a few times. It rolled to the side of that spirit stone.

Just at this moment——

Don't know where the spirit stone got the ability.

One could only see a band of fiery red-colored light spread out, enveloping the entire Fire Source Stone Essence.

When the fiery red-colored light disappeared, that chunk of Fire Source Stone Essence also disappeared along with it.

Chapter 1093 – The Fifth Challenge (3)

Su Luo speechlessly licked her lips.

The reward that was won back with great difficulty disappeared this fast, in the time it took to take a breath.

However, what comforted Su Luo was that the decayed air on the little stone's body gradually scattered. It now had a faint thriving vitality.

Seeing this, without demur, Su Luo took the Fire Source Stone Essence in Nangong Liuyun's hand and also tossed it into her space.

Sure enough, just like what happened now, another bright light enveloped the Fire Source Stone Essence, immediately following that, the Fire Source Stone Essence disappeared again.

The little stone really could eat!

Because the little stone had already recognized Su Luo as master from a drop of her blood.

Therefore, Su Luo could feel that sudden thriving vitality from the little stone.

She could feel that the little stone was very happy, very merry, moreover, it still opened its mouth, crying piteously for food.

Unfortunately...there were only these two chunks of Fire Source Stone Essence, there weren't anymore.

Li Yaoyao saw Su Luo without demur, snatching away the Fire Source Stone Essence from Nangong Liuyun's palm, and an angry look appeared on her face.

This woman!

Before, Third Senior Brother had already given her the Plant Essence, now, she even snatched the Fire Source Stone Essence!

However, Li Yaoyao lifted up her eyes to see Nangong Liuyun's face, full of love and indulgence towards Su Luo. She suddenly felt some gas stuck in her chest, making her feel unwell from being choked.

All the people involved endured this award ceremony, if she jumped out, then she would become the vile person!

Really about to infuriate her to death!

Nangong Liuyun's sharp eyebrows lifted up slightly, his gaze meeting Su Luo's.

Su Luo nodded her head without being asked.

The two people communicated wordlessly, and the bystanders couldn't make sense of what they saw.

Only the two of them understood.

Just at this moment, the face in mid-air suddenly smiled: "Now, it is too premature to determine the victor. I'll stealthily tell you guys that the final outcome of these challenges will depend on the total score oh."

The total score? Nangong Liuyun's pitch-black as ink eyes flashed slightly.

This point, he had already guessed.

However, Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo being well aware of this didn't mean that everyone else had also guessed it.

After this was said, the happiest person was none other than Li Yaoyao!

"The sum of all the scores! In other words, now, my team is number one!!!" Li Yaoyao almost jumped up from her excitement.

Su Luo gloomily exchanged a glance with Nangong Liuyun.

The speech became prophecy.

If it was based on the total score from the four challenges from before, Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun, this team's score, were not the highest.

The sum of the four challenges from before, the scores were: Beichen and Zi Yan: $70+75+60+30=235$

Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming: $70+35+74+74=253$

Luo Dieyi and Luo Haochen $80+40+50+25=195$

Nangong and Luo Luo: $50+51+75+75=251$

As for Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun's team, unexpectedly, they had 251 points!

That's right, it was 251 points .

Who told them to have such low scores for the first and second challenges.

"Humph! Still lacking compared to us, what do you have to be proud of!" Li Yaoyao coldly snorted towards Su Luo and tauntingly sneered.

Su Luo remained silent and rubbed her nose.

Besides being depressed, wherefore was she proud?

However, Li Yaoyao's current mood changed greatly, with a light echo of being a little crazily insane. Su Luo didn't intend to lower herself to her level.

"Come, bring your Frost Grass. Follow me to the fifth challenge. Hahaha, oh, the very splendid fifth challenge!"

Once the words were said, that face gradually faded away.

Everyone only felt their foreheads becoming dizzy. After the dizzy spell, when they opened their eyes, the scene had changed once again.

Everyone was clear, now, they had already arrived at the fifth challenge.

Just now, although the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls said it so lightly, but it sounded like it would make a person tremble with fear.

Faced with the unknown fifth challenge, everyone's hearts was inevitably somewhat apprehensive....

Chapter 1094 – The Fifth Challenge (4)

The fifth challenge.

This time, the eight people weren't separated like before.

In the end, where was this place?

One could only see the towering skies and a countless number of trees in the surroundings. The river chimed like bells uninterrupted. The river water was so clear that you could see to the bottom.

This place had preserved the most primitive conditions of a tropical rainforest.

Su Luo's eyes flashed slightly.

Could it be that this was a virgin tropical rainforest?

This Nine Different Palace Halls was really mysterious, every floor had its own landform.

Maybe it was a hillside, maybe a white jade bridge, maybe a grassland. Now, even a virgin tropical forest had appeared.

All of a sudden, everyone smelled a not-so-safe scent.

Nangong Liuyun was the first to return to his senses, a curtain of light directly wrapped around Su Luo, isolating her inside.

However, Su Luo, who had already taken a breath, had a kind of blurred feeling, tottering on the verge of collapse.

Just now, that breath of poisonous smoke might not seem remarkable, but the concentration of the poison was very high. It was not something that an ordinary person could endure.

Let alone to say Su Luo body's current condition.

In mid-air, that enormous face tilted up and howled with arrogant laughter.

“Hahahaha!!! You group of fools, you guys really were fooled! Hahahaha——”

Su Luo frowned.

So, it turned out that the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls had deliberately set up this trap for them to fall into.

In the beginning of the first four challenges, it was all very safe, as a result, when everyone entered the fifth challenge, nobody paid any mind. Who would have known that when they took the first breath, they would be poisoned.

“The fifth challenge, look for Vulture eggs, the rules are the same as the fourth challenge.”

Finished speaking, the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls howled with laughter and disappeared.

The rest, he didn't mention in the least bit.

What to do? Now, apart from Su Luo who had entered the protective covering, and Nangong Liuyun with his formidable cultivation, the rest of the people were all tottering on the edge of collapse.

What to do?

Could it be that in the fifth challenge, they would die before determining victor?

If they were defeated at the fifth challenge, then what's there to talk about getting the reward from the ninth challenge?

Nangong Liuyun's deep gaze looked at the several people on the other side, the corner of his mouth hooking up into a ghost of a smile with cold intentions.

He had a way to break through this poisonous smoke.

However, those several people opposite of him must die, then why not borrow this opportunity...a cold light flashed through Nangong Liuyun's eyes.

At this moment, Luo Haochen only felt burst of pain from his chest.

Suddenly, he felt a sweet flavor in his throat, immediately after, he vomited out a mouthful of blood.

Blood directly flowed out of Luo Dieyi's nose, no matter what, she couldn't stop it. Scaring her to the point of tears furiously falling down with dripping sounds.

Li Yaoyao's strength, among these people, was also near the bottom. Now, she had already started to vomit blood.

Just at this moment, that enormous face unexpectedly once again appeared in mid-air.

He howled with 'haha' laughter: "This reminder is free-of-charge, the condition to enter the ninth challenge, requires all of you to enter. If you guys are short by one person, tsk, tsk, tsk...."

When he said these words, those huge eyes on that enormous face looked at Nangong Liuyun in a bantering manner.

This face appeared and disappeared unpredictably, as if getting joy out of toying with them. As if, within this Nine Different Palace Halls, nothing escaped his eyes.

Nangong Liuyun coldly humphed.

This person clearly came to remind him.

Originally, he wanted to take this opportunity to let these people die silently. However, since there was this kind of condition for the ninth challenge, then he couldn't let them die just like this.

Even in future battles, he still had to protect them.

Thinking of this, Nangong Liuyun inevitably felt somewhat gloomy.

He lifted his eyes to coldly glare towards that hateful face.

In mid-air, on that enormous face was a pair of eyes, shining brightly like a copper bell. At this moment, he cast a provocative glance at Nangong Liuyun.

Two strong experts at the summit of cultivators, just like this, stared at each other, unmoving.

Su Luo was still enveloped within the protective cover.

Chapter 1095 – The Fifth Challenge (5)

She didn't inhale a lot of the poisonous smoke, and was quickly separated from the source, so right now, her mind was still sharp.

But, through the protective cover, she could see Zi Yan's face swell to a bright red. Her expression was full of agony.

Beichen Yin was also gasping coarsely for breath, he looked like he was about to start vomiting out blood like Luo Haochen.

What to do?

Su Luo's heart was really anxious.

She lowered her hands out of habit and found that she was still holding a brunch of Frost Grass in her hand.

Suddenly!

A bright idea flashed through Su Luo's mind.

This flash of light was astonishingly fast, lasting for just a moment.

But this time, Su Luo's luck was very good, she directly grabbed hold of it!

These Frost Grass!

Su Luo still remembered, near the end of the fourth challenge, that face had said.

He said, take your Frost Grass and follow me to the fifth challenge.

The task for the fourth challenge was to gather Frost Grass, then, why didn't that face take away the Frost Grass, but instead told them to take it to the fifth challenge?

There really wasn't a little bit of connection to this?

Or maybe, this Frost Grass was the critical point for the fifth challenge?

Su Luo knew that the Frost Grass was a medical herb, but only knew a smattering on how to use it.

Su Luo only knew that Frost Grass could dissipate miasma gas.

As for this poisonous smoke...

Seeing Zi Yan in such agony, Su Luo didn't have time to think more carefully. She grabbed a stalk of the Frost Grass and tossed it into her mouth and started to chew.

She didn't have to chew for long before she clearly felt her whole body relax a lot.

Originally, her mind was dizzy, her whole body was parched and burning up, her blood was boiling. Now, all of these painful symptoms disappeared one by one.

Su Luo had already proved that the material Frost Grass from the fourth challenge's task, was precisely what was needed to disperse the poisonous smoke in the fifth challenge.

The designer of these hurdles was definitely original, these tasks were closely connected to each other.

Nangong Liuyun, all along, had taken notice of Su Luo's every action.

Seeing her personally test the medicine, he didn't stop her.

Because with his intelligence, he had already guessed that the Frost Grass could eliminate this challenge's poisonous smoke.

At the same time, Luo Haochen also noticed Su Luo's actions.

He had no time to think, he grabbed a handful of Frost Grass and stuffed it in his mouth like a hungry wolf.

Under his lead, everybody impatiently grabbed a handful of Frost Grass and tossed it into their mouths.

Su Luo saw this and couldn't help but shake her head secretly.

Based on the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls' temperament of

watching them as if watching a play, these Frost Grass could not be so simple.

Now, Luo Haochen and the others were chewing on the Frost Grass like starving wolves, wasting it. Don't know what would follow this.

After a stick of incense time.

Everybody had been restored to their healthy state.

Zi Yan, with her lingering fear, followed closely behind Su Luo.

This time, if it wasn't for Su Luo being smart, moreover, bravely trying the medicine, the consequences would be was really hard to imagine.

Su Luo's body was seriously injured, and she still personally tested the medicine, this made Zi Yan feel very apologetic.

"There isn't much time, we must hurry." Nangong Liuyun lifted up Su Luo, immediately turning to entered the dense forest.

The Vulture eggs were not that easy to find.

Luck was very important.

"We also will go to and search!" Luo Haochen pulled at Luo Dieyi and rushed into the forest at flying speed.

Although they had won the first challenge, the Luo siblings had repeatedly suffered defeat in the next several challenges. This made Luo Haochen, who had just tasted the sweetness of victory, feel very much not reconciled.

Also, after seeing Su Luo getting all those high quality rewards again and again, Luo Haochen was even more jealous.

So this time, he had firmly decided that he must get number one!

A band of eight people, four teams, very quickly, entered the vast virgin tropical rainforest that didn't seem to have a boundary.

Just like a few pieces of small stones thrown into the ocean, that didn't even cause a ripple on its surface.

Chapter 1096 – The Fifth Challenge (6)

Vulture eggs, how does one go about finding them?

With regards to other people, naturally, it would depend on them to personally rush about in every direction and try their luck.

However, with regards to Su Luo, she completely did not need to do so.

Why?

Because she had two little spirit pets that loved to eat!

This virgin tropical rainforest was like a host to the two spirit pets.

Without Su Luo having to tell them, the two little things, with jolting buttocks, had run far away. They didn't even leave a shadow behind.

The forest was densely covered with miasma.

But for these two little spirit pets, it seemed to have no effect on them at all.

Although Su Luo had the two spirit pets' help on her side, but the situation on this road kept changing, she didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

More often, the two little spirit pets, whose acute sense of smell were equally matched, would find a vulture egg at the same time. With an cry of 'awoo', they would rush up to it.

The two little spirit pets, both of which had speed as their forte, fast as a bullet, shot towards that towering Vulture nest.

Vultures were classified as a flying type magical beast, therefore, their nests were often built extremely high up. An ordinary magical beast simply had no way to enter the nest.

Of course, that went only for ordinary magical beasts.

As for the little divine dragon and the Nine-tailed Spirit Fox's kind of high-level magical beasts, this little bit of height, they could completely ignore and disregard.

The two little spirit pets, embodying monkeys, moved quickly up the tree.

Seeing that the little divine dragon was about to seize the Vulture egg

The little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox coldly snorted, then, she extended a paw to directly poke the little divine dragon's forehead.

"Awoo, awoo——" Why did you poke me!

The little divine dragon was not amused.

"Howlwoo, howlwoo——" Why didn't you change into a little lamb!

The little spirit fox was not happy.

"Awoo, awoo——" Stupid! I'm a dragon, king of the dragon race! Definitely not a sheep!

The little divine dragon raised his chin in a prideful manner and, in passing, even gave the little spirit fox a shove.

The little Nine-tailed Spirit Fox almost fell off the tree from that shove. As a result, our little spirit fox suddenly became furious!

"Howlwoo, howlwoo——" You are merely a stupid dragon tossed out by the dragon race! Sniveling dragon! Useless dragon!

The two little guys that were inarticulate, the more they argued, the angrier they got.

Afterwards, the two little guys also forgot about the Vulture eggs up above.

Just these two, one moment an 'awoo awoo', another moment a 'howlwoo, howlwoo'. Arguing without understanding each other, being incessantly noisy.

These two looked like a boy and girl that found each other objectionable, quarreling in kindergarten.

Su Luo elegantly held her forehead, suddenly, her mind felt extremely painful, as if her brain had become huge.

She speechlessly gave a cough, with a wave of her hand, the huge leafy vines of the Spirit Gathering Tree shot out. Very quickly, it picked up that Vulture egg that had been forgotten by the two spirit pets and returned with it.

Right now, Su Luo's body wasn't well, naturally, she made use of the resources on hand.

Suddenly, Su Luo felt that the surrounding atmosphere was somewhat fishy.

That familiar nauseating and about-to-vomit feeling once again started to attack her chest.

Su Luo's face turned into frost, with a gaze seeking confirmation, she looked towards Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun nodded slightly: "Looks like the effect of one stalk of Frost Grass only lasts for fifteen minutes."

Su Luo, without further ado, took one stalk of Frost Grass and tossed it in her mouth.

So, it turned out that the secret of the Frost Grass was here.

This time, Su Luo very much rejoiced that they had picked one hundred stalks of Frost Grass in the previous challenge.

One stalk of Frost Grass could help one person hold on for fifteen minutes.

One hour is four segments of fifteen minutes, so, that was to say, one person needed four stalks of Frost Grass for one hour.

In other words, if nothing unexpected happened, Nangong Liuyun and her, the two of them, depending on the Frost Grass they had in hand, they could stay in this virgin tropical rainforest for twenty-five hours.

Chapter 1097 – The Fifth Challenge (7)

Of course, this was under the most perfect circumstances.

“Take the Vulture eggs back, after hatching, then it can be used to form an aerial fleet.” Nangong Liuyun’s tone was level, “So, we need to do the utmost to get as many as possible.”

Such a great opportunity only comes once, it would be a pity not to make use of it.

“Yes!” Su Luo nodded her head.

Although that face didn’t clearly say it, but it could be seen that the master of Nine Different Palace Halls didn’t consider these things to be valuable.

They could take away the Frost Grass, then, these vulture eggs, too, could be brought back.

In the eyes of the master of Nine Different Palace Hall, Vulture eggs were useless, but taken back to the outside world, it was a priceless treasure.

To form an aerial fleet? The more Su Luo thought about it, the better it sounded.

Nangong Liuyun eventually would leave Eastern Ling kingdom, if the country had such an aerial fleet protecting it, he could leave with a peace of mind.

Su Luo remembered all the sacrifices Nangong Liuyun had made for her. Now, it was rare to encounter things he cared about, so Su Luo naturally would help him with all her strength.

“This is just the first Vulture egg, we have the most Frost Grass, now, we occupy the best conditions, there’s no reason we should lose. Now, we should hurry and look for more Vulture eggs.” Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun seriously.

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head, with support from his hand, Su Luo once again landed on his back. She smiled and said: "Let's go."

Time passed in seconds and minutes.

Having the least amount of Frost Grass, and at the same time wasting a lot in the beginning, the Luo siblings were the first to be defeated.

There were indeed many Vulture eggs in the virgin tropical rainforest, the Luo siblings stuffed four Vulture eggs in their arms and quickly left.

A very strange matter was that, after they gave up on searching, that strange miasma didn't have any effect on them any more.

Following closely, Beichen Ying and Zi Yan had six Vulture eggs in their arms and also gave up behind them.

Now, apart from Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo, there was still Li Yaoyao's group, searching with great effort in the virgin tropical rainforest.

In comparison, Li Yaoyao still had a lot of Frost Grass in her hand.

If two people were to use it, there still would be enough for more than nine hours.

"Second Senior Brother! This time, you must help me!" Li Yaoyao pulled at Situ Ming's hand, pouting her little mouth and saying this, looking pitiful.

Situ Ming secretly sighed and remained silent.

"Second Senior Brother, just consider this Yaoyao begging you, okay? This time——" Li Yaoyao repeatedly begged.

Situ Ming showed signs of reluctance.

In fact, he really had a method to find the Vulture eggs very quickly, but——

But it could damage his cultivation, even shorten his lifespan.

Situ Ming's eyes were calm as water and as deep as a bottomless pool, looking at Li Yaoyao determinedly and seriously.

"Second Senior Brother, you had said before, no matter what I wanted in this world, you would spare no effort to help me accomplish my desires. Now, I want this time's victory, help me once again, okay?" Li Yaoyao's eyes were

shining like starlight, pure like a white lotus.

Situ Ming took a deep breath, finally, he still nodded his head: "Okay."

Yaoyao, what you said was correct, no matter what you want, Second Senior Brother will spare no effort to help you achieve your wish.

Even if he had to sell his soul to the devil!

After Situ Ming promised, his finger sliced by, immediately, a deep cut appeared in the center of his palm.

Fresh blood immediately rushed out, splashing Li Yaoyao in the face.

Situ Ming drew in the empty air, dot after dot, line after line, one after another, complicated inscriptions were carved in mid-air.

Fresh blood flowed bit by bit, very quickly, the ground was spotted with bloodstains.

Chapter 1098 – The Fifth Challenge (8)

Li Yaoyao quietly retreated a step back.

However, at this moment, her eyes were twinkling with lights of excitement.

Blood sacrifice!

Second Senior Brother was using blood sacrifice to temporarily borrow spirit knowledge from the master of dark magic. Very quickly, they would be able to easily find the Vulture eggs.

Su Luo! This time, you will lose for sure! Li Yaoyao's eyes flickered with maliciousness and a self-satisfied light.

She completely didn't notice that Situ Ming's figure was staggering from having lost too much blood.

Even if she had noticed it, she still would pretend that she didn't see it.

Even if Second Senior Brother paid with his life for her, that was because he would gladly endure the hardship. What was there that she needed to care about?

"Yaoyao, let's go." Situ Ming, with great difficulty, squeezed out a smile on his pale face.

"Oh, Second Senior Brother, are you okay?" Li Yaoyao asked offhandedly.

However, Situ Ming's eyes brightened because of her deeply concerned manner.

"I'm totally fine, I will recover very quickly, don't worry." Situ Ming smiled with eyes bent like half moons, "When the time comes, even if it's to use blood sacrifice again, I can also do it."

"Then things just can't be better!" Li Yaoyao immediately was all smiles.

But she didn't notice in the slightest that Situ Ming's body stiffened at this sentence of hers.

Turning his body around at an angle Li Yaoyao couldn't see, Situ Ming slowly exhaled a coarse breath. A bitter smile appeared in his eyes.

For her... was it really worth it?

Recalling when she first got to Purgatory City, that extremely adorable little girl with two small ponytails and her little head tilted to the side...

Such a small height, gradually transformed into a slender, elegant fairy with exceedingly good temperament.

"Second Senior Brother, hurry up and let's go, what are you thinking about?" Li Yaoyao opened her eyes widely and blinked a few times. It made her seem even more innocent and adorable.

Worth it, for this lady in front of his eyes, even if he was to die immediately, that would still be worth it.

Situ Ming smiled faintly, carrying Li Yaoyao, he flitted forward with flying speed.

The him right now seemed to have a new kind of skill.

His nose was sensitive to the degree that it stupefied people.

In the process of flitting by, suddenly, his body stopped, then, he took Li Yaoyao and jumped up the tree trunk.

"Wah! Such a huge Vulture egg!" Li Yaoyao was pleasantly surprised and continuously beamed with joy.

Situ Ming looked at her smiling pair of beautiful eyes bent in an arc, and the melancholy in his heart was swept clean. Suddenly, his heroism seemed to reach the sky. "It's nothing, there's more following this one!"

The follow up was definitely as Situ Ming had said.

He could smell the Vulture eggs from several hundred meters away. He flew up the trees and found an egg every time.

The Vulture egg was not big, but it wasn't small either.

Somewhat bigger than a goose egg, but smaller than a grapefruit, somewhere in between the two.

They searched this whole journey, the eggs on their path could not escape this calamity and were collected until nothing was left.

There were very few Vulture eggs.

Every ten years, the adult Vulture couples could give birth to one egg.

But they were no match for Situ Ming's nose that was more keen than a dog's.

After this journey, Li Yaoayo's arms were so full that she nearly couldn't hold more.

Finally, Situ Ming took off his outer robe, made a makeshift bag out of it, and let Li Yaoyao carry it on her back.

"Second Senior Brother! You're too awesome, so great!" Li Yaoyao excitedly praised in a loud voice.

Situ Ming's whole heart enjoyed the praises, he smiled from ear to ear, in an excellent mood.

"It merely comes from using blood sacrifice, not worth mentioning it." Situ Ming pretended to be modest.

"Regardless of whether it came from blood sacrifice or not, Second Senior Brother is so awesome! This time, we will win for sure!" Li Yaoyao waved her fist in the air.

Chapter 1099 – The Fifth Challenge (9)

Li Yaoyao was dead set on winning against Su Luo.

Time gradually passed.

In the end, Li Yaoyao could not put anymore Vulture eggs into her makeshift bag.

Seriously speaking, the Vulture eggs still took up a lot of space.

“It would be great if we also had a space bag.” Li Yaoyao recalled Nangong Liuyun’s space bag, and she couldn’t help but be extremely envious.

“I think that Su Luo also has one.” Situ Ming’s eyes flashed slightly.

“What? Su Luo, that little slut, also has a space bag?” Li Yaoyao’s heart immediately felt uneven.

“It should have been given to her by Nangong, otherwise, with her strength, it is impossible for her to obtain it.” Situ Ming nodded his head with certainty.

However, when he was speaking, his gaze stared fixedly on Li Yaoyao, paying close attention to the expression on her face.

Nangong clearly didn’t like Li Yaoyao, because of these circumstances, Situ Ming decided not to give up on her.

What he needed to do now was to scoop out Nangong from Li Yaoyao’s heart bit by bit, to scratch it clean. Afterwards, he would avail himself of the void to enter.

“Su Luo, this vixen, don’t know how, but she got Third Senior Brother bewitched and going around in circles. He even gave her such a precious space bag!”

She, as the majestic princess of the Jade Lake’s Li family, didn’t even have a

space bag, why should Su Luo, that little slut, have one?

Li Yaoyao was nearly mad from jealousy.

If she knew what Su Luo had wasn't a space bag, but rather an entire space, don't know if Li Yaoyao would pass away on the spot from jealousy.

Without a space bag, Li Yaoyao and Situ Ming could only take as many Vulture eggs as they could carry in their arms and on their back, before withdrawing using their original route.

They had already used up their Frost Grass, if they didn't leave now, they would be poisoned again.

The last to withdraw was Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun.

Su Luo saw the pile of Vulture eggs by Li Yaoyao's feet, and her eyes blinked slightly from surprise.

Li Yaoayo saw Su Luo's astonishment, her feeling of being proud of herself, became clearer and clearer in her eyes.

This time, Su Luo, that little slut, lost for sure!

Just at this moment, space twisted, and that enormous face appeared in mid-air.

"One of the teams among you actually completed the task better, above the quota, not bad, not bad."

Li Yaoyao lifted an eyebrow, being proud of herself.

The team that completed the task above the quota was definitely them.

"Method of blood sacrifice is the same as self-mutilation. To treat oneself so cruelly, however, I like it. Ha ha ha——"

This face that was in mid-air burst out in mad laughter.

The space around them went through a period of turmoil. Momentarily, the earth quaked and the mountains shook, with crashing sounds echoing.

With great difficulty, he stopped laughing.

"Come, turn in the goods from this task, let this master of the palace have a

look to see who won this time.”

Vulture eggs were easy to count, you could do it at a glance.

Luo siblings only had three.

Beichen Ying and Zi Yan only had six.

In this challenge, the most important was to look at Li Yaoyao's and Su Luo's teams for the winner.

The winner would emerge among these two teams.

Seeing those two huge bags next to Li Yaoyao, Su Luo's heart also felt unsure.

But, the matter was already at this point, there was no way to change it.

Who told Li Yaoyao to have Situ Ming at her side, who didn't hesitate to use his life to pay for it all?

Su Luo waved her hand and the Vulture eggs she collected piled up neatly on the ground in front of her.

These Vulture eggs, every one of them was sparkling, translucent and pure. On them, were faint spiritual energy flowing all over.

If you looked carefully, you would discover that the Vulture eggs that had stayed in her space, were a bit whiter than others not from her space.

However, nobody was aware of this minute detail.

“Fifty vulture eggs!” Zi Yan cried out in surprise!

With this comparison, Zi Yan immediately felt like crying.

Her team only had six ah, only six ah!

Chapter 1100 – The Fifth Challenge (10)

“How many do you have?” Zi Yan impatiently asked Li Yaoyao.

Li Yaoyao’s mouth pulled up into a sneer: “What? You want to know?”

“Could it be that you want to keep it covered up?” Zi Yan’s mouth twitched in displeasure.

“There’s no harm in letting you see it.” Li Yaoyao said exceptionally proudly.

She untied the clothing of the makeshift bag, and many Vulture eggs were stacked neatly in a pile. With a visual estimate, the quantity was not low.

“Fifty-one!” Zi Yan counted and stared at Li Yaoyao with a not-so-good expression.

Li Yaoyao raised her chin proudly: “Of course it’s fifty-one eggs, what’s the problem?”

What’s the problem? This problem was huge!

Su Luo’s team only had fifty, okay!

Zi Yan sent a cold glare at Li Yaoyao, turned her head around and then walked back.

She was fine with losing to anybody else, but she just couldn’t swallow losing to Li Yaoyao.

Beichen Ying cast a thoughtful glance at Situ Ming, his mouth curling into a taunting and derisive sneer.

Now, the scores for this challenge had also come out.

Don’t know how the Nine Different Palace Halls’ master had calculated it. The final result was: Luo siblings team: 30 points;

Zi Yan's team: 40 points;

Su Luo's team: 70 points;

Li Yaoyao's team: 71 point;

The final result was still Li Yaoyao's team being victorious.

"Su Luo, you lost!" Li Yaoyao strutted around to walk to in front of Su Luo, with her head raised proudly, casting sideway glances at her.

Su Luo was unconcerned, she smiled contentedly: "Then indeed, congratulations."

Li Yaoyao contemptuously looked askance at her: "Your heart must be very unsatisfied right? But seeing you unhappy makes me feel especially at ease."

Su Luo's face was indifferent, as she smiled faintly: "Li Yaoayo, do you really feel so at ease?"

"What do you mean? If you have the ability, then say it again!" Li Yaoyao's long, shapely eyebrows knotted, her eyes round from glowering.

How could Su Luo be frightened by her threat? She smiled coldly:

"Li Yaoyao, somebody used the blood sacrifice at the cost of his life, a victory from such a method, you really feel this at ease? So justified and righteous?"

"I don't understand what nonsense you are saying!" Li Yaoyao face was scary, she heavily snorted, and turned her body around.

"This was said by the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls, are you denouncing the master of the Nine Different Palace Halls for saying nonsense?" Su Luo smiled from beginning to the end with a perfectly composed appearance.

This accusation was really too heavy.

Now, everybody was still trying to muddle along in the Nine Different Palace Halls. The master of this Nine Different Palace Halls had that kind of temperamental and eccentric persona, who dared to offend him?

Li Yaoyao was immediately somewhat alarmed: "I didn't say it like that!"

"Yes, you didn't say it like that, you just did it this way and nothing more." Su

Luo lazily leaned against Nangong Liuyun's body, in a manner of being too lazy to argue with her.

Li Yaoyao was immediately choked off.

In mid-air, that face stayed apathetic: "Before, I forgot to say, but you guys can take these Vulture eggs back with you."

"What? We can take them away?!" Zi Yan exclaimed in surprise.

These were Vulture eggs ah, after they hatched, they were all flying type magical beasts ah.

Usually, on the outside, it was hard to even come across one, now, they actually could bring them all back?

Zi Yan thought miserably, if time could let her start over, she would certainly gather enough Frost grass in the fourth challenge. Afterwards, she would look for many more Vulture eggs in the fifth challenge.

However, now, it was too late to regret it....

Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun exchanged a glance, a shallow smile floating in their eyes.

They had already guessed it would be this way, so, along the way, they had spent all their energy looking for them.

Among them, the happiest person was none other than Li Yaoyao.

Publisher:

Support On Bitcoin :

1EQWkgnjcxRm4jDTLyZ3y4wobUJaZHxVBF

From TooLate

From [Doswap](#)